





Class \_\_\_\_\_

Book \_\_\_\_\_

2











THE

# HISTORY OF LYNN.

---

BY ALONZO LEWIS.

---

These hills, where once the Indian dwelt,  
These plains, o'er which the red deer ran,  
These shores, where oft our fathers knelt,  
And wild doves built, unscared by man,—  
I love them all, for they to me  
Are as some pleasant memory.—MS. POEMS.

---

BOSTON:

PRESS OF J. H. EASTBURN, 60, CONGRESS ST.

1829.



3  
A: D 2  
912

## INTRODUCTION.

---

WHEN I began, some years since, to collect the facts of which the following pages are composed, very little was known of the early history of Lynn. It had not even been ascertained in what year the town was settled—the records for the first sixty two years were wholly wanting—and of all the inhabitants for the first half century, the names of only six or seven were known to a few lovers of antiquarian research.

It has been said that the town records were burnt about the year 1690; but that they were in existence long after that period is evident, from an order respecting them, on the seventh of March, 1715, when the inhabitants voted, “that whereas some of the old town books are much shattered, therefore so much shall be transcribed, out of one or more of them, into another book, as the selectmen shall think best.”\* A few pages were thus transcribed, and the volumes were then probably thrown aside as useless. In my researches, I found several of the old records of births and deaths, commencing in 1675, in a very ruinous condition, and caused them to be bound and furnished with indexes. The earliest record of the proceedings of the town, which has been discovered, commences in the year 1691; and the earliest parish record in 1722.

I have spared no labor or expense in searching every at-

---

\* Town Records.

tainable source of information, to supply the deficiencies of the lost records. I have discovered numerous ancient manuscripts, and among them a copy of three pages of the old town records for 1638, and several in subsequent years. I have also found a Journal, kept daily for forty four years, by Mr. Zaccheus Collins, and another for twenty years, by Mr. Richard Pratt, from which I have extracted some interesting particulars. I have transcribed from the records of state and county, as well as from those of town and parish, and from various files of unpublished papers. It would have been quite as easy, in most instances, to have conveyed the ideas in my own words, but as I was pleased with the quaintness and simplicity of the original language, I thought that perhaps others might be equally so. The records and files of our state government afford much information respecting our early history; but, in their present condition, a great amount of time and patience must be expended, by any one who would obtain it. When the General Court are truly apprized of the valuable and almost inexhaustible treasures of historical knowledge contained in those records and papers, they will probably cause them to be fairly copied and furnished with a complete index. The records and papers in other public offices, and particularly those of the Quarterly Court at Salem, merit a similar attention.

I have given the names of nearly four hundred of the early settlers, with short sketches of the lives of many. I have also collected the names of some of the red people, and hope that attention will be given by others to increase the number. This is the first endeavour, in any town, to collect the names of all the early settlers, with those of the original proprietors of the soil who were contemporary with them. I trust that no person who is an inhabitant of Lynn, or interested in the details of antiquity, will think that I have been too particular. A proper attention to dates and minuteness of circumstance constitutes the charm of history; and the actions and manners of men can never cease to be interesting.

There is something so natural in enquiring into the history of

those who have lived before us, and particularly of those with whom we have any connexion, either by the ties of relation or place, that it is surprising any one should be found by whom this subject is regarded with indifference. The knowledge of history was considered so important by the Monarch Bard, that he commenced a song of praise to God for its enjoyment; and the relation in which we are placed cannot render it less important and interesting to us. To trace the settlement and progress of our native town—to read the history of the play-place of our early hours, and which has been the scene of our maturer joys—to follow the steps of our fathers through the course of centuries, and mark the gradation of improvement—to learn who and what they were, from whom we are descended—and still further, to be informed of the people who were here before them, and who are now vanished like a dream of childhood; and all these in their connexion with the history of the world and of man—must certainly be objects of peculiar interest to every inquisitive mind. And though in the pursuit of these objects we meet with much that calls forth the tear of sympathy and the expression of regret, we yet derive a high degree of pleasure from being enabled to sit with our fathers, in the shade of the oaks and pines of “olden time,” and hear them relate the stories of days which have gone by. One of the most useful faculties of the mind is the memory, and history enables us to treasure up the memories of those who have lived before us. Our existence might indeed be regarded as incomplete, if we could not command the record of past time, as well as enjoy the present, and hope for the happiness of the future. Reality must ever possess a stronger power over the minds of reasonable and reflecting men than Imagination; and though Fiction frequently asserts, and sometimes acquires the supremacy, it is generally when she appears dressed in the habiliments of Probability and Historical Truth.

Among the pleasures of the mind, there are few which afford more unalloyed gratification, than that which arises from the remembrance of the loved and familiar objects of home, com-

bined, as they always are, with the memory of the innocent delights of our childhood. This is one of the few pleasures of which the heart cannot be deprived—which the darkest shades of misfortune serve to bring out into a fuller relief—and which the uninterrupted passage of the current of time tends only to polish and to brighten. When wearied with the tumult of the world, and sick of the anxieties and sorrows of life, the thoughts may return with delight to the pleasures of childhood, and banquet unsated on the recollections of youth. Who does not remember the companions of his early years—and the mother who watched over his dangers—and the father who counselled him—and the master who instructed him—and the sister whose sweet voice reprov'd his wildness? Who does not remember the tree under which he played—and the house in which he lived—and even the moonbeam which slept upon his bed? Who has not returned, in sunlight and in sleep, to the scenes of his earliest and purest joys, and to the green and humble mounds where his sorrows have gone forth over the loved and the lost who were dear to his soul? And who does not love to indulge these remembrances, though they bring swelling tides to his heart and tears to his eyes? And whose ideas are so limited that he does not extend his thoughts to the days and the dwellings of his ancestors, until he seems to become a portion of the mountain and the stream, and to prolong his existence through the centuries which are passed? O the love of Home!—it was implanted in the breast of man, as a germ of hope, which should grow up into a fragrant flower, to win his heart from the ambitious and the vanities of life, and woo him back to the innocent delights of his morning hours. Sweet Spirit of Home!—thou Guardian Angel of the good! thou earliest, kindest, latest friend of man! how numerous are thy votaries! how many are the hearts which bow before thy sway! What tears of sorrow hast thou dried! what tears of recollection, of anticipation, of enjoyment, hast thou caused to flow! To all bosoms thou art grateful—to all climes congenial. No heart that is innocent, but has a temple for thee—no mind,



however depraved, but acknowledges the power which presides over thy shrine.

The advancement of the American colonies has been unparalleled in the annals of the world. Two hundred years have scarcely circled their luminous flight over this now cultivated region, since the most populous towns of New England were a wilderness. No sound was heard in the morning but the voice of the Indian, and the notes of the wild birds, as they woke their early hymn to their Creator; and at evening no praise went up to heaven, but the desolate howl of the wolf, and the sweet but mournful song of the muckawis.\* The wild powah† of the savage sometimes broke into the silence of nature, like the wailing for the dead; but the prayer of the Christian was never heard to ascend from the melancholy waste. The mountains, which lifted their sunny tops above the clouds, and the rivers, which, for thousands of miles, rolled their murmuring waters through the desert, were unbeheld by an eye that could perceive the true majesty of God, or a heart that could frame language to his praise. At length the emigrants from England arrived, and the western shore of the Atlantic began to hear the more cheerful voices of civilization and refinement. Pleasant villages were seen in the midst of the wide wilderness, and houses for the worship of God, and schools for the instruction of children rose, where the wild beast had his lair. The men of those days were compelled to endure privations and to surpass difficulties which exist to us only on the page of history. In passing through the forest, if they turned from the bear, it was to meet the wolf—and if they fled from the wolf, it was to encounter the deadly spring of the insidious catamount. At some periods, the planter could not travel from one settlement to another, without the dread of being shot by the silent arrow of the unseen Indian;

---

\* The Indian name of the whip-poor-will. The sounds which strike the ear of one familiar with the English language, like the words whip poor will, fell on the tympanum of an Indian like the syllables of the word muck-a-wis.

† Powah was the designation of a priest of the red men, and their meetings for the exercise of their rude worship, were also denominated powahs, or powows.

nor could his children pursue their play in the shady woods, or gather berries in the green fields, without danger of treading on the coil of the rattlesnake, or of being carried away by the remorseless enemy. The little hamlets, and the lonely dwellings, which rose, at long intervals, over the plains, and among the forests, were frequently alarmed by the howl of the wolf and the yell of the savage; and often were their thresholds drenched in the blood of the beautiful and the innocent. The dangers of those days have passed away, with the men who sustained them, and we enjoy the fruit of their industry and peril. They have toiled, and fought, and bled for our repose. Scarcely a spot of New England can be found which has not been fertilized by the sweat or the blood of our ancestors. How grateful should we be to that Being who has bestowed on us the reward of their enterprise!

But the day on which the *May-flower* landed her passengers on the Rock of Plymouth, was a fatal one for the aborigines of America. From that day the towns of New England began to spring up among their wigwams, and along their hunting grounds; and though sickness, and want, and the tomahawk, made frequent and fearful incursions on the little bands of the planters, yet their numbers have continued to increase, till they have become a great and powerful community. It is indeed a pleasing and interesting employment, to trace the progress of the primitive colonies; to behold them contending with the storms and inclemency of an unfriendly climate, and with the repeated depredations of a hostile and uncivilized people, till we find them emerging into a state of political prosperity, unsurpassed by any nation of the earth. But it is painful to reflect, that in the accomplishment of this great purpose, the nations of the wilderness, who constituted a separate race, have been nearly destroyed. At one period, the white people seem to have been in danger of extermination by the warlike and exasperated savages; but in a few years, the independent Sassacus, and the noble Miantonimo, and the princely Philip, saw their once populous and powerful nations gradually wasting away and dis-

appearing. In vain did they sharpen their tomahawks, and point their arrows anew, for the breasts of the white men—in vain did they call on the spirits of their fathers, to animate their hearts in their conflicts with the strangers—in vain did the valiant Wampanoag dispatch his trusty warriors two hundred miles across the forest, to invite the Tarentines to lend their assistance in exterminating the English. The days of their prosperity had passed away. The time had come when a great people were to be driven from the place of their nativity—when the long line of kings and sachems, who had ruled over the wilderness for unknown ages, was to be broken, and their light to be extinguished. The pestilence had destroyed thousands of the bravest of their warriors, and left the remainder feeble and disheartened. Their hands were unnerved—their councils were distracted. Feuds and dissensions prevailed among the tribes, and though they made frequent depredations upon the defenceless settlements, and burnt many dwellings, and destroyed many lives, yet the emigrants soon became the ascendants in number and in power; and the feeble remnant of the red men, wearied and exhausted by unsuccessful conflicts, relinquished the long possession of their native soil, and retired into the pathless forests of the the west.

Much has been written to free the white people from the charge of aggression, and much to extenuate the implacability of the savages. We should be cautious in censuring the conduct of men, through whose energies we have received many of our dearest privileges; and they who condemn the first settlers of New England as destitute of all good principle, err as much as they who laud their conduct with indiscriminate applause. Passionate opinion and violent action were the general faults of their time; and when they saw that one principle was overstrained in its effect, they scarcely thought themselves safe till they had vacillated to the opposite extreme. Regarding themselves, like the Israelites, as a peculiar people, they imagined that they had a right, without an immediate warrant

from Heaven, to destroy the red men as heathen. The arms, which at first they took up with the idea that they were necessary for self defence, were soon employed in a war of extermination; and the generous mind is grieved to think, that instead of endeavouring to conciliate the Indians by kindness, they should have deemed it necessary to determine their destruction. The red men had undoubtedly good cause to be jealous of the arrival of another people, and, in some instances, to consider themselves injured by their encroachments. Their tribes had inhabited the wilderness for ages, and the country was their *home*. Here were the scenes of their youthful sports, and here were the graves of their fathers. Here they had lived—and loved—and grown old with the hills and rocks. They were indeed most cruel and implacable in their revenge, and the relation of their barbarities is enough to chill the blood of any sensitive person; but it should be remembered that those cruelties were committed at a time, when the massacre of six or eight hundred of the red people, sleeping around their own hearths, was regarded as a meritorious service. In resisting to the last, they fought for their country, for freedom, for life; they contended for the safety and happiness of their wives and children, for all that brave and high minded men can hold dear; but they were subdued, and the few who were not either killed or made prisoners, sought refuge in the darker recesses of their native woods. The ocean, in which they had so often bathed their athletic limbs, and the streams, which had yielded their bountiful supplies of fish, were abandoned in silent grief—and the free and fearless Indian, who once wandered in all the pride of unsubdued nature, over our fields and among our forests, was driven from his home, and compelled to look with regret to the shores of the sea, and the pleasant abodes of his youth. A few indeed continued, for some years, to linger around the shores of their ancient habitations—but they were like the spirits whom Ossian has described, sighing in the wind, around the dwellings of their former greatness. They are gone—and over the greater part of New England the voice of

the Indian is heard no more. The names of Saugus, of Nahant, and of Swampscot remain—and may they continue to remain, the imperishable memorials of a race, which has long since passed away.

In contemplating the destruction of a great people, the reflecting mind is naturally disposed to inquire into the causes of their decay, in order to educe motives for a better conduct, that their wrongs may be in some degree repaired, and a similar fate avoided. If dissention weakened the power of the tribes of the forest, why should it not impair the energies of our free states? If the red men have fallen through their neglect of moral and religious improvement, to make way for a more refined state of society, and the emanations of a purer worship, how great is the reason to fear that we also may be suffered to wander in our own ways, because we will not know the ways of God, and to fall into doubt, disunion, and strife, till our land shall be given to others as it has been given to us. He who took the sceptre from the most illustrious and powerful of ancient nations, and caused the tide of their prosperity and refinement to flow back and stagnate in the pools of ignorance, obscurity and servitude, possesses ample means to humble the pride of any nation, when it shall cease to be guided by his counsels. Already has an evil of the most alarming consequence passed far on its march of desolation. Already has the fondness for strong drink seized on thousands of our people, bringing our young men to untimely graves, and in its rapid and deleterious progress, sapping the foundations of moral excellence, and pulling down the glory of our country. If we may trust the appearances in our western regions, our land was once inhabited by civilized men, who must have disappeared many years before the arrival of our fathers. Long may Heaven avert their destiny from us, to evince to the world how virtuous a people may be, on whom the blessing of civil liberty has fallen as an inheritance.

The political system of our nation is probably the best which was ever devised for the common good ; but it practically

embraces one evil too obvious to be overlooked by the Christian. While it adopts the correct principle, that all men have, by nature, the same civil rights, it retains, with strange inconsistency, nearly one-fifth of the whole population in a state of abject bodily and mental servitude. Christianity and political expediency cry aloud for their emancipation, nor will they always remain unheard. Many generous minds are already convinced of the importance of an attention to this subject, and many more might speak in its behalf, in places where they could not be neglected. Where are the ministers of our holy religion, that their prayers are not preferred for the liberation of men with souls as immortal as their own?—Where are the senators and representatives of our free states, that their voices are not heard on the banks of the Potomac, in behalf of that most injured race? It is a duty which they owe, not only to truth, justice, and humanity, but to the great portion of the union which they represent, and which has declared its decided disapprobation of slavery, that they protest against its continuance, and deprecate the evils which will result from it; nor can they be true to the trust which has been reposed in them, if they make no effort for its abolition. As an advocate of the great principles of freedom and truth, I call on all who have talents, and power, and influence, to exert them in favor of that great portion of the immortal intelligences of God, who are crushed beneath the burdens of slavery, in this age of professed Christianity and boasted freedom. On its own principles our government has no right to enslave any portion of its subjects; and I am constrained in the name of God and truth, to say, that they must be free. No argument in favor of their servitude should for a moment be weighed against religion and truth. The inferiority of the dark to the white people, in their mental capacity, is an ungenerous pretence; for if those on whom nature and education have conferred the highest degrees of mental honor, have a right to enslave all who are beneath them in that respect, there is an end at once of all rational liberty. That the black people possess mental powers capable

of extensive cultivation, has been sufficiently evinced in the instances of Gustavus Vasa, Ignatius Sancho, Lislet, Capiten, Fuller, Wheatley, and many others ; and the period may arrive when the lights of freedom and science shall shine much more extensively on these dark children of bondage—when the knowledge of the true faith shall awaken the nobler principles of their minds, and its practice place them, in moral excellence, far above those who are now trampling them in the dust. How will the spirit of regret then sadden over the brightness of our country's fame, when the muse of history shall lead their pens to trace the annals of their ancestors, and the inspiration of poetry instruct their youthful bards to sing the oppression of their fathers in the land of freedom !

I trust that the time will arrive when on the annals of our country shall be inscribed, the Abolition of Slavery—the time when all the virtuous shall unite their exertions for the suppression of intemperance and of vice in all its forms, and for the promotion of those plans which embrace the welfare, not merely of a part, but of the whole—that the unqualified approbation of Heaven may be secured to our nation, and “that glory may dwell in our land.”

There were but few settlements made in Massachusetts before the year 1629. The colony at Plymouth was founded in 1620, and till 1692 continued a separate government. In 1624, a settlement was begun at Weymouth, by the Reverend William Morell, an Episcopal minister, who wrote a Latin poem descriptive of New England. In 1625, a plantation was commenced at Braintree. About the year 1626, the Rev. William Blackstone, an Episcopal minister, established his residence at Boston ; but it does not appear that any other settlers, except those of his own family, were there, until four years afterward. In the autumn of the same year, Mr. Roger Conant, with several others, commenced a settlement at Naumkeag, now Salem. It was probably in 1627, that Mr. Thomas Walford fixed his residence at Mishawum, now Charlestown ; to which place, in 1628, a few persons removed from Salem.

These towns therefore, with the Episcopal settlements, at Jamestown, in Virginia, begun in 1607, at Henrico, in 1611, and at Portsmouth, in New Hampshire, in 1623, may properly be regarded as the only permanent European settlements within the limits of the United States, before the settlement of Lynn. Different historians have assigned different dates to the origin of these towns, but their settlement should certainly be considered as beginning with the arrival of the first settlers, whether few or many, if they continued till the arrival of others. On the 19th of March, 1628, the council at Plymouth, in England, sold all that part of Massachusetts, between three miles north of Merrimac river and three miles south of Charles river, to six gentlemen, one of whom was Mr. John Humfrey, who afterward came to Lynn.

In delineating the annals of a single town, it can scarcely be expected that so good an opportunity will be afforded for variety of description and diffusiveness of remark, as in a work of a more general nature. It is also proper to observe, that this compilation was begun without any view to publication, but solely to gratify that natural curiosity which must arise in the mind of every man, who extends his thoughts beyond the persons and incidents that immediately surround him. I may however be permitted to hope, that an attempt to delineate with accuracy, the principal events which have transpired within my native town, for the space of two hundred years, will be interesting to many, though presented without any endeavor to adorn them with the graces of artificial ornament. To all those who have assisted me in collecting information, I offer the sincere expression of my gratitude; and am particularly indebted to the kindness of Hon. James Savage and Rev. William Jenks of Boston, John Farmer, Esq. of Concord, N. H. Mr. William Gibbs of Salem, Mr. Benjamin Mudge of Lynn, and Mr. Joshua Coffin, author of a manuscript History of Newbury, an animated and interesting sketch, which I hope he will soon present to the public.



## HISTORY OF LYNN.

---

1629.

THE town of Lynn is one of the first which were planted in the State of Massachusetts. Its settlement was begun in the year 1629. Among the authorities for assigning the settlement to this year, is the Rev. Samuel Danforth's almanac for the year 1647. He gives a list of the first towns settled in this state, to which he prefixes these words—"The time when these townes following began." By several ancient manuscripts, it appears that the settlement must have commenced as early as the last of June.

The Indian name of the river which now forms part of the western boundary of the town, is Saugus; by which appellation the town was known for several years.<sup>1</sup> The eastern extremity was called Swampscot, which name it still retains. Nahant, an Indian word signifying an Island, is the original name of the peninsula which has become so celebrated.

The first white men who are known to have been inhabitants of Lynn, were Edmund Ingalls, and his brother Francis Ingalls. A record, preserved in the family of the former, says that "Mr. Edmund Ingalls came from Lincolnshire, in England, to Lynn, in 1629." He was a farmer, and settled in the eastern part of the town, near a small pond in Fayette street. The place where his house stood is still pointed out by his descendants. He had a malt-house near the margin of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Colony Records.

pond. When the lands were divided in 1638, there were appointed "To Edmund and Francis Ingalls, upland and meadow, 120 acres. Quarterly court files." He died in 1648. His estate was valued at £135 8s. 10d., including "house and lands £50." The name of his wife was Ann, and he had nine children, six of whom were born in England. 1. Robert, who inherited his father's "house and houselot," and whose descendants still remain at Lynn. 2. Elizabeth. 3. Faith; who married Andrew Allen. 4. John, to whom his father gave "the house and ground that was Jeremy fits, lying by the meeting house," and "that three Acres land he hath in England."<sup>1</sup> 5. Sarah, who married William Bitnar. 6. Henry, who was born in 1627, and removed to Andover, where he died in 1719, aged 92 years. A descendant of his, Captain Henry Ingalls died in 1803, aged 84 years. In 1802, about a year before his death, he added the following note to the family genealogy. "Mr: Henry Ingals from whom all these spring, was born in the year 1627, and He died in the year 1719, who Lived Ninety two years, and two months after his Death, I Henry Ingals was Born, who have Lived Eighty three years, So that we two Henry Ingals: hath Lived on this Earth one Hundred and Seventy Five years only two month between his Death and my Bearth." 7. Samuel. 8. Mary. 9. Joseph. The descendants of Mr. Edmund Ingalls, in this and other towns, have been numerous and respectable, and several of them eminent in the learned professions.

Francis Ingalls, brother of Edmund, was born in 1601. He was a tanner, and lived at Swampscot. He built a tannery on Humfrey's brook, where it is crossed by a stone bridge. The vats were filled up in 1825. This is said to have been the first tannery in New England.

On their arrival, the emigrants found the place inhabited by Indians. They were a tribe of a great nation called Abergians, extending from Charles river to the Merrimac, formerly governed by a powerful sachem, Nanepashemet,<sup>2</sup> or the New Moon.<sup>3</sup> He was killed about the year 1619; and the government was continued by his queen, called "Squaw Sachem," to whom most of the tribes in Massachusetts were subject. In 1635, she had a second husband, whose name was Wappacowet.

Montowampate, Sachem<sup>4</sup> of the Saugus indians, lived on Sagamore Hill, near the eastern end of the beach. He was a

---

1 Q. C. Files. 2 Prince. 3 Concord Rec. 4 Pronounced Sawkim.

son of Nanepashemet, and had jurisdiction of Lynn and Marblehead. He died in 1633. He was called by the white people, James; and he had a sister who was called Abigail. The word Sagamore, or more properly, Sâgamo, is only another pronounciation of Sâchem, a word meaning strength, and applied by the red people, as a title to their chiefs. Sâgamore Hill therefore, is the same as Sâchematôog Hill, or the Hill of Kings.

Wonohaquaham, called John, was sachem of a tribe of Indians on the west of Saugus. He was a brother of Montowampate, and lived first at the residence of his father in Medford,<sup>1</sup> and afterward at Winnesimct, called by the first settlers, Rumney Marsh, part of which is now in Chelsea, and part in Saugus.

Winnepurkitt, who was at this time "a youth," thirteen years of age, was a brother of Montowampate, and succeeded him as sachem of Lynn. He was commonly called George Rumney Marsh, and was the proprietor of Deer Island in Boston Harbour. In the latter part of his life he went to Barbadoes. It is supposed that he was carried there with the prisoners who were sold for slaves at the end of Philip's war. He died, soon after his return, in 1684, at the house of Muminquash, aged 68 years. He married a daughter of Poquanum, called Ahawayetsquaine, who died in 1685. He had three daughters. 1. Petagumsk, called Cicely. She had a son, Tontoquon, called John. 2. Wuttaquatinnusk, or the Little Walnut, called Sarah. She had two sons; Nonnupanohow, called David; and Wuttanoh, which means a Staff, called Samuel. 3. Petagoonaquah, called Susannah. The Indians are said to have been fond of receiving names from the white people. They appear also to have been known by various names in their own language. Wuttaquatinnusk and Petagoonaquah were both also called Wanapanequin. Their names are variously spelt in depositions and records, as they were imperfectly understood from the nasal pronounciation of the Indians.

An Indian chief, called by the English "Duke William," and more commonly "Black Will," was the proprietor of Nahant.<sup>1</sup> He was killed by some of the white people in 1633. His father, who was a sachem, lived at Swampscot, and died before the arrival of the English.

---

<sup>1</sup> Wood.

Poquannum, or Dark Skin, lived on Nahant. He had two children. 1. Queakussen, born in 1611, and generally known by the familiar appellation of "Captain Tom."<sup>1</sup> He removed to Mistick, and afterward to Patucket. Mr. Gookin, in a deposition, 1686, says, he is "an Indian of good repute, and professes the Christian religion." 2. Ahawayetsquaine, called Joane, who married Winnapurkitt.

Nahanton was a cousin of Montowampate, and was born in 1606.<sup>1</sup>

Nahanta was the wife of one of the chiefs, and according to tradition, the saunks or queen of Montowampate.

Wenuchus was one of the principal females, and probably the same as Abigail.

Pahpocksit was a grand daughter of Wenuchus, and removed to Penacook, now Concord in New Hampshire.

Owussamug, called John, lived at Rumney Marsh. He had a son Muminquash, born in 1636, and called James Rumney Marsh.

Peckananyit, called Ned, was a servant of Mr. Zacheus Gould. In 1652, he mortgaged to Henry Bartholomew, a tract of land, about eight miles square, on the north of Merrimac river.<sup>1</sup>

The names of other Indians were, Appooquahamock, Manatahqua, Quanapowit, a kinsman of Winnapurkitt, and Wawpatuck, or the Goose. George, the sachem, had a brother who was called George Indian.

The Saugus Indians are said to have been very numerous, till they were reduced by a great sickness in 1617, which ranged through most of their settlements, and in some places left scarcely enough alive to bury the dead. In their persons, the Indians were from five to six feet in height, of a reddish and pleasant complexion, with black hair and black eyes. Their whole form was a model of strength and activity. They were unvexed by cares, undebased by rum, and were seldom deformed or sick. They oiled their bodies with the fat of bears and eagles, and tied their hair in a lock on the top of the head, frequently with a snake skin. The dress of the men was the skin of a wolf or bear, tied round the waist, and in winter another thrown over the shoulders, with moccasins, or shoes made of moose hide. The dress of the women was commonly of beaver skin. Their weapons were bows, arrows, and tomahawks. Their bows were made of walnut, or some

other elastic wood, and strung with sinews of deer or moose. Their arrows were made of elder, and feathered with the quills of eagles. They were headed with a long sharp stone, tied to a short stick, which was thrust into the pith of the elder. Their tomahawks were made of a flat stone, sharpened to an edge, with a groove in the middle. This was inserted in a bent walnut stick, the ends of which were tied together. The heads of their arrows and tomahawks are frequently ploughed up in the fields; and the bones of the aborigines themselves, accompanied by shells and other implements, are sometimes discovered, in digging wells and cellars.

The red men had few arts, and only such as were requisite to their subsistence. We are however indebted to them for snow shoes, scoop nets, and the art of preserving flesh in snow. They subsisted principally by hunting and fishing. Their only objects of cultivation were corn, beans, pumpkins, and squashes, which are all indigenous plants. Their season for planting was when the leaves of the white oak were as large as the ear of a mouse. From this observation was formed the rule of the first settlers.

When the white oak trees look gosling grey,  
Plant then, be it April, June, or May.

Their women performed all the labour of agriculture, and hoed the corn with large clam shells. Their fields were tended with great care, and the corn was harvested in the ground. When boiled in kernels, it was called samp; when parched and pounded for journeys, it was termed nokehike; and when pounded and boiled, it was called hominy. They also boiled corn and beans together, which they called succatash. Berries were plenty, especially strawberries "very large ones, some being two inches about,"<sup>1</sup> and these they bruised in a mortar, and, mixing them with corn, made strawberry bread. Whortleberries also were employed in the same manner. Some of their dishes are still well known, and highly relished—their samp, their hominy or hasty pudding, their stewed beans or succatash, their parched corn, their boiled and roast ears, and their whortleberry cake. Their houses, or wigwams, were rude structures, made of poles set round in the form of a cone, and covered with bark and mats. They were moved about by the women, to the hunting, fishing, and planting grounds. In winter, one great house, built with more care,

---

<sup>1</sup> Wood.

served for the accommodation of many. They had two kinds of boats, called canoes; the one made of a pine log, twenty to sixty feet in length, burnt and scraped out with shells; the other made of birch bark, very light and elegant. They made fishing lines of wild hemp, equal to the finest twine; and used fish bones for hooks. Their method of catching deer, was by making two fences of trees, nearly a mile in extent, in the form of an angle, with a snare at the place of meeting, in which they frequently took the deer alive.

The Indians appear to have been very fond of amusement. The tribes, even from a great distance, were accustomed to challenge each other, and to assemble upon the Lynn Beach to decide their contests. Here they sometimes passed many days in the exercises of running, leaping, shooting, and other diversions. Before they began their sports, they drew a line in the sand, across which the parties shook hands in evidence of friendship, and sometimes painted their faces, to prevent revenge. A tall pole was then planted in the beach, on which were hung beaver skins, money, and ornaments, for which they contended; and frequently all they were worth was ventured in the play. One of their principal sports was football. Their ball was not much larger than a handball, which they caused to mount into the air with their naked feet. They had another game called *puim*, which was played by shuffling together fifty or sixty short sticks, and contending for them. Another game was played with five flat pieces of bone, black on one side and white on the other. These were put into a wooden dish, which was struck on the ground, causing the bones to bound aloft, and as they fell white or black the game was decided. During this play, the Indians sat in a circle, making a great noise, by the constant repetition of the word *hub, hub*,—come, come,—from which it was called *hubbub*. Their money was made of shells gathered on the beaches, and was of two kinds. The one was called *wampum peag*, or white money, and was made of the twisted part of the conkle, strung together like beads. Six of these passed for a penny, and a fathom of six feet, for about five shillings. The other was called *suckauhoc*, or black money, and was made of the thick part, or hinge, of the *poquahoc* clam, bored with a sharp stone. The value of the black money was double that of the white. These shells were also very curiously wrought into pendants, bracelets, and belts of wampum several inches in breadth, with the figures of animals and flowers. Their

sachems were profusely adorned with it, and some of the princely females wore caps and aprons worth forty or fifty dollars. It passed for beaver skins, and other commodities, as currently as silver.

The Indians are supposed by some to be the remnants of the long lost ten tribes of Israel; and their existence in tribes, the similarity of some of their customs, and the likeness of many words in their language, seem to favor this opinion. There can be little doubt that they came from the northeastern part of Asia, at some very remote period. They have ever been distinguished for friendship, justice, magnanimity, and a high sense of honor. They have been represented as insensible and brutish; but with the exception of their revenge, which was dreadful, they were not an insensate race. The old chief who requested permission of the white people to smoke one more whiff before he was slaughtered, was thought to be an unfeeling wretch; but he expressed more than he could have done by the most eloquent speech. The red people received the emigrants in a friendly manner, and taught them how to plant; and when any of the settlers travelled through the woods, they entertained them with more love than compliments, kept them freely many days, and often went ten and even twenty miles to conduct them on their way. On the arrival of the first ship, they are said to have taken it for a winged island, and the discharge of cannon for thunder. They were astonished at the operation of a windmill; and when they saw a ploughman break up more ground in an hour, than they could open with their shells and sticks in a day, they said he was Hobbamoc, or a demon. They had a rude worship, which, according to their tradition, was once well attended; but, before the arrival of the English, it had greatly declined. Their principal powah, or priest, was Passaconaway, who resided at Pentucket, or Haverhill. They believed that after death they should go to the region whence came the pleasant south west wind, where dwelt their great and benevolent god, Cautantowit, and where they should enjoy perpetual pleasures, and hunting and fishing without weariness. They endured the most acute pains without a murmur, never laughed loud, and their words and deeds were seldom strangers. The Indians in this neighborhood had no *f* nor *r* in their language. They cultivated a kind of natural music, and modulated their voices by the songs of birds. They had war and death songs, and lullabies to quiet their children. The voices of their fe-

nales, it is said, were exquisitely harmonious ; and when heard through the shadowy woods, might easily have been mistaken for the warblings of some melodious birds, or the notes of a fine toned instrument.

The woods were filled with wild animals, of which the most numerous were foxes.<sup>1</sup> There were also wolves, bears, moose, deer, beaver, raccoons, and that most insidious and deadly foe of human kind, the catamount. This animal has never been particularly described, but many stories are related of its attacks upon the early settlers. It is one of the numerous varieties of the cat kind, from three to six feet in length, with short legs, and commonly of a cinnamon colour. It climbs trees, and leaps with surprising agility on the unwary traveller whom it surprises in the forest. An Indian, in passing through the woods one day, heard a rustling in the boughs overhead, and looking up, saw a catamount preparing to spring upon him. He said he “cry all one soosuck”—that is, like a child—knowing that if he did not kill the catamount, he must lose his own life. He fired as the animal was in the act of springing, which met the ball and fell dead at his feet.

The wild pigeons are represented to have been so numerous, that they passed in flocks so large as to “obscure the light,”<sup>2</sup> and continued flying “for foure or five houres together,” to such an extent that a person could see neither “beginning nor ending, length or breadth, of these millions.”<sup>3</sup> When they alighted in the woods, they frequently broke down large limbs of the trees with their weight, and the crashing was heard at a great distance. A single family has been known to have killed more than one hundred dozen in one night, with poles and other weapons ; and they were often taken in such numbers, that they were thrown into piles, and kept to feed the swine. The Indians called the pigeon wuscowhan, a word signifying a wanderer. The harbour was frequently covered with wild fowl, so that persons have killed “50 Duckes at a shot ;” the porpoises pursued their rude gambols along the shore, and the seal slumbered on the rocks. The light birchen canoes of the red men were seen gracefully skimming over the surface of the bright blue ocean, which spreads its interminable expanse toward the south ; while the half clad females were beheld, bathing their olive limbs in the lucid flood, or sporting on the smooth sands of the beach, and gathering the spotted eggs,

---

1 Town Records. 2 Dudley. 3 Wood.



the beautiful shells, or the curious bones, which abounded among the pebbles, to string into beads, or weave into wampum, for the adornment of their necks and arms. At one time, an Indian was seen silently endeavoring to transfix the wild duck or the brant as they rose and sunk with the alternate waves; and at another, a glance was caught of the timid wild deer, rushing through the shadow of the dark green oaks, or the sly fox, bounding from rock to rock, among the high cliffs of Nahant, and stealing along the shore to find his evening repast which the tide had left upon the beach. The little sand birds darted along the thin edge of the wave—the white gulls, in hundreds, soared screaming overhead—and the curlews filled the echoes of the rocks with their wild and watery music. This is no imaginary picture, wrought up for the embellishment of a fanciful tale—but the delineation of an actual scene which presented itself to the eyes of our fathers.

The first settlers, arriving at that particular time,

When all a man sailed by or saw was his own,

appropriated to themselves such portion of the land as appeared most eligible. On the fourth of March, an order was passed by the Massachusetts company at London, that each person who advanced fifty pounds, should have two hundred acres of land, and that each one who came over on his own expense, should have fifty acres.<sup>1</sup> This value of the land was chiefly imaginary, for, many years afterward, it might have been bought for about six cents an acre. On the twenty ninth of October, the company chose Mr. John Winthrop governor, and Mr. John Humfrey deputy governor,<sup>2</sup> with the design that they should embark with their families, as soon as convenient, to superintend the affairs of the new colony.

---

## 1630.

EARLY in the spring, eleven vessels, having on board about seven hundred persons, left the harbour of Southampton, and sailed for New England. In the number of the passengers were, Mr. John Winthrop, the first governor of Massachusetts; Mr. Isaac Johnson and his wife, the lady Arbella, who came

---

1 Hubbard. 2 Col. Rec.

“from a paradise of plenty and pleasure, which she enjoyed in the family of a noble earldom, into a wilderness of wants ;”<sup>1</sup> with many other persons of dignity, wealth, and reputation. As Mr. Humfrey was not ready to remove, he did not embark at this time, but on the twenty-ninth of March, Mr. Thomas Dudley was chosen in his stead.<sup>2</sup>

The first settlers of the Massachusetts Colony were Episcopalians. They are said to have been displeased with some extraordinary ceremonies required of them, rather than with the doctrines and discipline of the Church ; but to avoid misrepresentation it is best to let them speak their own language. On the seventh of April, after they had gone on board the ships, they addressed a letter “To the rest of their brethren in and of the Church of England,” in which they say—“We desire you would be pleased to take notice of the principals and body of our company, as those who esteem it our honour to call the Church of England, from whence we rise, our dear mother ; and cannot part from our native country, where she specially resideth, without much sadness of heart, and many tears in our eyes ; ever acknowledging that such hope and part as we have obtained in the common salvation, we have received it from her bosom. We leave it not therefore, as loathing that milk wherewith we were nourished there ; but blessing God for the parentage and education, as members of the same body, shall always rejoice in her good, and unfeignedly grieve for any sorrow shall ever betide her ; and while we have breath, sincerely desire and endeavour the continuance and abundance of her welfare, with the enlargement of her bounds in the kingdom of Christ Jesus.”<sup>1</sup> The sentiments expressed in this address seem to be those of feeling hearts, warmly imbued with the devotion of their infancy ; and far happier might it have been for them and their posterity, had they retained their love for the Church, and planted her faith in its purity. One who was well acquainted with many of them, says, that they always walked in a distinct path from the rigid separatists, nor did they ever disown the Church of England to be a true church, as retaining the essentials of faith and order.”<sup>2</sup>

On the morning of Saturday, June the twelfth, the ship *Arbella*, which contained the principal persons, entered the harbour of Salem. In a few days all the other vessels arrived ;

---

1 Hubbard. 2 Col. Rec.

and the passengers, dispersing along the shore of Massachusetts Bay, began to make settlements in the pathless woods. Mr. Dudley, in a letter to the Countess of Lincoln, says, that some of them settled "upon the river of Sawgus." Others went to Boston and Charlestown; and the rest began new settlements at Roxbury, Dorchester, Watertown, and Medford. The following are the names of some of the persons who appear to have been inhabitants of Lynn this year.

Joseph Armitage lived on the Common, opposite the Academy, and his land extended to Strawberry Brook. He was by occupation a tailor, and was admitted a freeman in 1637. Some years afterward he became the proprietor of a corn mill and slitting mill on Saugus river.<sup>1</sup> In 1646, his wife Jane opened the first tavern in Lynn, which was called The Anchor.<sup>2</sup> He died 27 June, 1680, aged 80 years. His wife died 3 March, 1677. His children were, 1. John. 2. Rebecca, who married Samuel Tarbox in 1665.

Allen Breed was by occupation a farmer, and lived in the western part of Summer street. He had two hundred acres of land. He was born in 1501. The name of his wife was Elizabeth, and his children were, Allen, Timothy, Joseph, and John. His descendants are numerous; and from him the village in which he resided was called Breed's End.

William Ballard was a farmer, and lived on the Boston road, west of Saugus river. He was admitted a freeman in 1638, and in the same year was a member of the Quarterly Court at Salem. His children were, 1. John. 2. Nathaniel. 3. Elizabeth, who married George Abbot of Andover.

Edward Baker was a farmer, and lived on the south side of Baker's Hill in Saugus. He was admitted a freeman in 1638; and was buried 17 March, 1687. His wife Joan died 9 April, 1693. His sons were, 1. Edward, who married Mary Marshall, 7 April, 1675. 2. Thomas, who married Mary Lewis, 10 July, 1689.

Samuel Bennet was a carpenter, and a member of the Ancient Artillery Company in 1639. A pine forest in the northern part of the town, still retains the name of Bennet's swamp. He resided in the western part of Saugus, and when the towns were divided, the line passed through his land, eastward of his house, so that afterward he was called an inhabitant of Boston.

Nicholas Brown was a farmer, and lived in Walnut street,

---

<sup>1</sup> Essex Reg. Deeds. <sup>2</sup> Col. Files.

Saugus. He removed to Reading in 1644. He had a son Thomas, who continued in Lynn, and died 28 August, 1693. His descendants remain.

Thomas Coldam was admitted a freeman in 1634. He kept Mr. Humfrey's windmill on Sagamore hill, and died 8 April, 1675, aged 74 years.

Clement Coldam resided in Lynn several years, and then removed to Gloucester. He had a son Clement, born in 1622, who continued in Lynn, and was a miller, and a member of the Artillery Company in 1645.

Thomas Chadwell was a farmer, and lived in Summer street. He died in February 1683. His sons were, Thomas, Moses, and Benjamin. His descendants remain.

William Cowdrey was a farmer. He removed to Reading in 1640. He was appointed Clerk of the Writs, 21 February, 1650; and was also Town Clerk, Selectman, and Representative of Reading. He had a son Nathaniel.

Henry Collins was a farmer, and lived in Essex street. He was admitted a freeman in 1637; and was appointed a member of the Quarterly Court at Salem, in 1639. He was buried 20 February, 1687. The name of his wife was Ann; and his children were, 1. Henry. 2. John. 3. Joseph. His descendants remain. Among them was Abijah Collins, born in 1642; a tall and well formed person, of a strong mind and extensive capacity. In his youth, he became enamoured of a young woman, in one of the neighbouring towns, named Sarah Braefoot. Some of his relatives interposed obstacles in the way of his union, which was finally frustrated; and from that time his reason wavered, and he became as one who has lost the guiding star of his existence, and wandered about, occasionally entering houses, to solicit a cup of cold coffee, of which he was particularly fond. Thus he continued till his death, when he was eighty three years of age; another instance of the inutility and folly of attempting to prescribe a path to youthful affection.

Thomas Dexter was a farmer, and lived on the western bank of Saugus river, near the Iron Works. He was admitted a freeman 18th May, 1631. He owned eight hundred acres of land, and was called, by way of excellence, "Farmer Dexter." He was a very active and enterprising man, and built a mill, and a wear across Saugus river. Among his speculations, he purchased Nahant of Black William, for a suit of clothes; which occasioned the town an expensive law suit in 1657.

He became one of the first proprietors of the town of Sandwich in 1637, and promoted its settlement, but did not remove at that time. He had a son Thomas, a grandson Richard, and a great grandson William, but none of his posterity remain at Lynn.

William Dixey was born in England in 1607, and came over a servant with Mr. Isaac Johnson. On his arrival, application was made by his master, for him and others, "for a place to sitt downe in; upon which," he says, "mr. Endecott did give me and the rest leave to goe where wee would; upon which I went to Saugust, now Linne, and there wee met with Sagamore James and som other Indians, whoe did give me and the rest leaue to dwell there or thereabouts; whereupon I and the rest of my master's company did cut grass for our cattell, and kept them upon nahant for som space of time; for the Indian James Sagamore and the rest did give me and the rest, in behalf of my master Johnson, what land we would; whereupon wee sett down in Saugust, and had quiet possession of it by the above said Indians, and kept our cattell in nahant the sumer following."<sup>1</sup> Mr. Dixey was admitted a freeman at the first General Court in 1634, and some years afterward removed to Salem.

Robert Driver was a farmer, and lived in Shepard street, on the south of which a creek still bears his name. He was made a freeman in 1635, and died 3 April, 1680, aged 88 years. His wife Phebe died in February, 1683. He had a son Robert, who was a soldier in Philip's war, in 1675.

George Farr was a farmer in Essex street. He was admitted a freeman in 1635, and died in 1661. His wife Elizabeth was buried 11 March, 1687. His children were John, Lazarus, Benjamin, Joseph, Mary, Martha, Elizabeth, and Sarah.

Jeremy Fitch was a farmer, and lived in Shepard street. He removed to Reading in 1644.

Edmund Farrington was a farmer, and had two hundred acres of land; part of which was on the western side of Federal street, and part on the eastern side of Myrtle street, where the land is well known as Farrington's Field. In 1655, he built a mill on Water Hill, where a pond was dug, and a new brook opened for half a mile, called Farrington's Brook. He died in 1670, aged 88 years. His children were, 1. Mat-

---

<sup>1</sup> Deposition in Q. C. Files, 1 July, 1657.

thew. 2. Elizabeth, who married John Fuller in 1646. On the sixteenth of June, 1666, he gave his son Matthew half his corn mill, "except the tole of my son fuller's grists, which is well and Duly to be ground tole free, during the life of my daughter Elizabeth."<sup>1</sup>

Adam Hawkes was a farmer, and settled on the Hawkes Farms in Saugus. He owned the land where the iron ore was found, and filled up one of the mines, on the supposition that it contained silver. Soon after his settlement his house was burnt. The only persons in it, at the time of its taking fire, were a servant girl and two twin infants, who escaped. He died in 1671. His sons were, Adam, John, Moses, Benjamin, and Thomas. His descendants remain.

Edward Holyoke was a farmer, and had five hundred acres of land. He was a member of the Quarterly Court from 1639 to 1643, and in 1647 and 1648; and was representative in ten sessions of the General Court. On the fourteenth of May, 1641, he was a patentee at Piscataqua, but did not remove. He died at Rumney Marsh, 4 May, 1660. His estate was valued at £681. His farm in Lynn, £400; his farm at Beaver Dam, in Reading, £150; three acres of land on Nahant, £6; two oxen, £12; four cows £16; and his books, £20; among which seem to have been some valuable manuscripts. In his will, he beseeches God to impress his children with the importance of private prayer and public worship, and bequeaths each of them a lock of his hair.<sup>2</sup> His children were, 1. Elizur, who removed to Springfield, and married Mary Pyncheon, 20 November, 1640. 2. Elizabeth, who married George Keysar. An excellent spring of fresh water, in the western part of the town, surrounded by five beautiful willows, is well known by the name of Holyoke spring. A descendant of his, Edward Augustus Holyoke, an eminent physician, died at Salem, 31 March, 1829, aged one hundred years and seven months.

Edward Howe was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1636. He was representative in seven sessions of the General Court, and a member of the Quarterly Court in 1637. He died suddenly in April, 1639. After the court was ended at Boston, having dined in his usual health, he went to the river side, to pass over to Charlestown, and while waiting for the ferry boat, fell dead on the shore. He is said to have been "a Godly man."<sup>3</sup> He had a son Edward.

---

1 Essex Reg. Deeds. 2 Suffolk Reg. Deeds. 3 Winthrop.

Lieutenant Daniel Howe, brother of Edward, was admitted a freeman in 1634. He was representative in five courts, and the first Lieutenant of the Artillery Company in 1638. He was master of a vessel, and removed to New Haven.

Ephraim Howe, son of Daniel, was master of a vessel which sailed from Boston. In September, 1676, his vessel, in which were two of his sons and three other persons, was disabled off Cape Cod, by a storm, which carried away the rudder. They were then driven about by the winds and waves for several weeks, till his two sons, lashed to the deck with ropes, perished with wet and cold. The vessel was thrown on a desolate island, where three of the others soon died. Mr. Howe was thus left alone, and found means to subsist for nine months, lodging and praying in a cave, till he was taken off by a vessel in June.<sup>1</sup>

William Hathorne was born in England in 1607, was admitted a freeman in 1634, removed to Salem, and was a member of the Quarterly Court in 1639.

Thomas Hudson was a farmer, and lived on the western bank of Saugus river. He owned the land where the Iron Works were situated, part of which he sold for that purpose. He had a son Jonathan. His descendants remain. My mother is one of them.

Christopher Hussey was born at Dorking in Surrey, England. He went to Holland, where he became enamoured of Theodata, daughter of Rev. Stephen Batchelor, who had resided there several years; but her father would not consent to their marriage, unless Mr. Hussey would remove to New England, whither he was preparing to go. Mr. Hussey came to Lynn, with his mother, widow Mary Hussey, and his wife, in 1630; and here, in the same year, his son Stephen was born, who was the second white child born in Lynn. He removed to Newbury in 1636, and was chosen one of the first "7 men" there in 1637.<sup>2</sup> In 1638 he became one of the first settlers of Hampton in New Hampshire, and was chosen a provincial Councillor.<sup>3</sup> In 1685 he was cast away and lost on the coast of Florida. His children were, 1. Stephen, born in 1630, married Martha Bunker, and died at Nantucket in 1718, aged 88 years. 2. John, who married Rebecca Perkins, by whom he had fourteen daughters and two sons. He removed to New Castle in Delaware, and died in 1711. 3. Joseph, who resided in Hampton, and was a representative in 1672. 4. Hul-

---

1 Hubbard. 2 Coffin. 3 Farmer.

dah, who was born in 1640, and married John Smyth, of Hampton. 5. Mary, who married Henry Dow, of Hampton.<sup>1</sup>

Christopher Lyndsey lived at first with Mr. Dexter, and afterward resided on Nahant, where a hill, on the northeastern part, is known by the name of Lyndsey's Hill. He died in 1668. His sons were John and Eleazer, whose posterity remain at Lynn.

Thomas Newhall was a farmer, and owned all the eastern side of Federal street. His house stood in the same place with that of Mr. Amos Rhodes. His children were, 1. John, who was born in England, and married Sarah Lewis 10 April, 1646. This is the earliest notice of a marriage at Lynn which has been discovered. 2. Thomas, born in 1630, who was the first white child born in Lynn. He married Elizabeth Potter, 29 December, 1652, and was buried 1 April, 1687, aged 57 years. His wife was buried 22 February, 1687. His children were, 1. Thomas. 2. John. 3. Joseph. 4. Nathaniel. 5. Elisha. 6. Elizabeth. 7. Mary. 8. Samuel. 9. Rebecca. The descendants of Mr. Thomas Newhall are more numerous than those of any other name at Lynn, and there are many in the adjacent towns.

Robert Potter was a farmer, and lived in Boston street. He was admitted a freeman in 1634. He had a daughter Elizabeth.

John Ramsdell was a farmer, and died 27 October 1688, aged 86 years. His wife Priscilla died 23 January 1675. His sons were John and Aquila, whose descendants remain.

John Taylor came from Haverhill, in England. His wife and child died on the passage.<sup>2</sup> He was admitted a freeman 19 October 1630. He lived on the western side of Saugus river.

Captain Edward Tomlins was a carpenter, and was admitted a freeman in 1631. He was six times chosen representative. In 1633 he built the first mill in Lynn, on Strawberry Brook, which flows from the Flax Pond. At one of the courts, he agreed to repair Mistick Bridge for £22. In 1638, he was a member of the Artillery Company. In 1640, he went to Long Island, but returned to Lynn, and was appointed Clerk of the Writs<sup>3</sup> in 1643. He went to London in 1644, and in 1679 was at Dublin.

Timothy Tomlins, brother of Edward, was a farmer, and

---

1 Coffin. 2 Winthrop. 3 Col. Rec.



was admitted a freeman in 1633. He was representative in thirteen sessions of the General Court. In 1640, he went with those who began a new settlement on Long Island, and returned. A pine forest in the northern part of the town is well known by the name of Tomlins' Swamp.

Captain Nathaniel Turner lived in Nahant street. He applied to be admitted a freeman, 19 October 1630, but did not take the oath till 3 July 1632. He was representative in the first seven sessions of the General Court, and a member of the first Quarterly Court at Salem in 1636. In 1633, he was appointed Captain of the militia, and in 1636 and 1637 had a command in several expeditions against the Pequod Indians. In 1638 he became a member of the Artillery Company; and in the same year sold his land on Sagamore Hill to Mr. Edward Holyoke, and removed to Quilipeake, with others, where a new settlement was begun and called New Haven. In 1639, he was one of the seven members of the first church in that place. In 1640, he purchased, for the town, of Ponus, an Indian Sagamore, the tract of land which is now the town of Stamford, for which he paid in "coats, hoes, hatchets, &c." His active and enterprising life was soon afterward terminated in a melancholy manner. In January 1646, he sailed for England, with Captain Lamberton, in a vessel which was never heard of more. In June 1648, it is said that the apparition of a ship was seen, under full sail, moving up the harbour of New Haven, a little before sunset, in a pleasant afternoon; and that as it approached the shore, it slowly vanished.<sup>1</sup> This was supposed to have been a reference to the fate of Captain Lamberton's ship. The following epitaph was written to the memory of Captain Turner.

Deep in Atlantic caves his body sleeps,  
Where the dark sea its ceaseless motion keeps,  
While phantom ships are wrecked along the shore,  
To warn his friends that he will come no more!  
But He who governs all with impulse free,  
Can bring from Bashan, and the deepest sea,<sup>2</sup>  
And when he calls, our Turner must return,  
Though now his ashes fill no sacred urn.

Captain Richard Walker was a farmer, and resided on the west of Sangus river. He was admitted a freeman in 1634,

---

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop. Mather.

<sup>2</sup> "I will bring again from Bashan, I will bring from the depths of the sea." Ps. 68. 22.

and was buried 16 May, 1687,<sup>1</sup> aged 95 years. His children were, 1. Richard, who removed to Reading, where he was several times chosen representative. 2. Samuel, who went to Reading. 3. Tabitha, who married Daniel King, jun. 11 March, 1662. 4. Elizabeth, who married Ralph King, 2 March, 1663.

Thomas Willis was a farmer, and the first resident on Willis's Hill, on which the Poor House is situated. The land on the south has ever since been called Willis's Neck, and the meadow on the north, Willis's Meadow. He was a representative in the first General Court, in 1634, and a member of the Quarterly Court in 1639. He became one of the first proprietors of Sandwich in 1637, but did not remove at that time.

John White was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman, 4th March, 1633.

William Witter was a farmer, and resided at Swampscot. He says, "Blacke will, or duke william, so called, came to my house (which was two or three miles from Nahant) when Thomas Dexter had bought Nahant for a suit of clothes, the said Black will Asked me what I would give him for the Land my house stood vppon, it being his land, and his fiather's wigwame stood their abouts, James Sagomore and John, and the Sagomore of Agawame, and diuers more. And George Sagomore, being a youth was present, all of them acknowlidginge Black will to be the Right owner of the Land my house stood on, and Sagomore Hill and Nahant was all his;" and adds "that he bought Nahant and Sagomer Hill and Swamscoate of Black William for two pestle stones."<sup>2</sup> He died in 1659, aged 75 years. The name of his wife was Annis, and his children were, 1. Josiah. 2. Hannah, who married Robert Burdin.

John Wood was a farmer, and lived in Essex street. The village in which he resided has ever since been called Wood End.

William Wood was admitted a freeman 18 May, 1631. He resided at Lynn about four years, during which time he wrote the work called New England's Prospect, containing a very favorable account of the early settlements. On the fifteenth of August 1633, he sailed, with Captain Thomas Graves, for London; where, in 1634, he published his book, in one hundred pages, octavo. In 1635, he published a map of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Lynn Records. <sup>2</sup> Depo. in Q. C. Files, 15 and 27 April, 1657.

eastern part of New England, engraved on wood. He returned to Lynn, and in 1637 became one of the first proprietors of Sandwich. He afterward removed to Concord, where he died in 1670, aged 88 years. His hand writing is said to have been very handsome.

Captain Richard Wright was selected in 1632, to confer with the governor about raising a public fund. He was admitted a freeman in 1634. He removed to Boston, where, in 1636, he contributed 6s. 8d. "towards the maintenance of free schoolmaster."<sup>1</sup>

The first settlers of Lynn were principally farmers, and possessed a large stock of horned cattle, sheep, and goats. For several years, before the land was divided and the fields fenced, the cattle were fed in one drove, and guarded by a man, who, from his employment, was called a hayward. The sheep, goats, and swine were kept on Nahant, where they were tended by a shepherd. Nahant seems to have been sold several times, to different individuals, by Black William, who also gave it to the plantation for a sheep pasture. A fence of rails put near together, was made across the reach near Nahant, to keep out the wolves, as it is said those animals do not climb. When the people were about building this fence, Captain Turner said, "Let us make haste, lest the country should take it from us."<sup>2</sup> In autumn the swine were let loose in the woods, that they might fatten themselves on nuts and acorns. The people of Lynn, for some years, seem to have lived in the most perfect democracy. They had town meetings every three months, for the regulation of their public affairs. They cut their wood in common, and drew lots for the grass in the meadows and marshes. These proved very serviceable to the farmers, in furnishing them with sustenance for their cattle, which was probably the reason why there were more farmers at Lynn than in any other of the early settlements. Mr. Jolinson says, "The chiefest corn they planted, before they had Plowes, was Indian grain.—And let no man make a jest at Pumpkins, for with this food the Lord was pleased to feed his people to their good content, till Corne and Cattell were increased." Their corn at the first was pounded with a wooden or stone pestle, in a mortar made of a large log, hollowed out at one end. They also cultivated large fields of barley and wheat. Much of the former was

---

1 Boston Rec. 2 Dep. in Q. C. Files, 27 April, 1657.

made into malt for beer, which they drank instead of ardent spirit. They raised considerable quantities of flax, which was rotted in one of the ponds, thence called the Flax Pond. Their first houses were rude structures, with steep roofs, covered with thatch, or small bundles of sedge or straw, laid one over another. The fire places were made of rough stones, and the chimneys of boards, or short sticks, crossing each other, and plastered inside with clay. Beside the haste and necessity which prevented the construction of more elegant habitations, the people who had wealth were advised to abstain from all superfluous expense, and to reserve their money for the public use. Even the deputy governor, Mr. Dudley, was censured for wainscoting his house.<sup>1</sup> In a few years, houses of a better order began to appear. They were built with two stories in front, and sloped down to one in the rear. The windows were small, and opened outward on hinges. They consisted of very small diamond panes, set in sashes of lead. The fire places were large enough to admit a four foot log, and the children might sit in the corners and look up at the stars. On whichever side of the road the houses were placed, they uniformly faced the south, that the sun at noon might "shine square." Thus each house formed a domestic sun dial, by which the good matron, in the absence of the clock, could tell, in fair weather, when to call her husband and sons from the field—for the industrious people of Lynn, then as well as now, always dined exactly at twelve. It was the custom of the first settlers to wear long beards, and it is said that "some had their overgrown beards so frozen together, that they could not get their strong water bottells into their mouths."<sup>1</sup> In very hot weather, "servants were privileged to rest from their labours, from ten of the clocke till two."<sup>2</sup> The common address of men and women was Goodman and Goodwife; none but those who sustained some office of dignity, or belonged to some respectable family, were complimented with the title of Master. In writing they seem to have had no capital F, and thus in the early records we find two small ones used instead; and one m with a dash over it, stood for two. The following song, which appears to have been written about this time, exhibits some of the peculiar customs and modes of thinking among the early settlers.

---

1 Winthrop. 2 Wood.

The place where we live is a wilderness wood,  
Where grass is much wanting that's fruitful and good ;  
Our mountains and hills, and our valleys below,  
Being commonly covered with ice and with snow.

And when the northwest wind with violence blows,  
Then every man pulls his cap over his nose ;  
But if any is hardy and will it withstand,  
He forfeits a finger, a foot, or a hand.

But when the spring opens we then take the hoe,  
And make the ground ready to plant and to sow ;  
Our corn being planted, and seed being sown,  
The worms destroy much before it is grown.

And while it is growing some spoil there is made  
By birds, and by squirrels, that pluck up the blade ;  
And when it is come to full corn in the ear,  
It is often destroyed by raccoon and by deer.

And now our old garments begin to grow thin,  
And wool is much wanted to card and to spin ;  
If we can get a garment to cover without,  
Our other in garments are clout upon clout.<sup>1</sup>

Our clothes we brought with us are apt to be torn,  
They need to be clouted<sup>2</sup> soon after they're worn ;  
But clouting our garments, they hinder us nothing,  
Clouts double are warmer than single whole clothing.<sup>3</sup>

If fresh meat be wanting to fill up our dish,  
We have carrots, and pumpkins, and turnips, and fish ;  
And if there's a mind for a delicate dish,  
We haste to the clam banks, and there we catch fish.

'Stead of pottage, and puddings, and enstards, and pies,  
Our turnips and parsnips are common supplies ;  
We have pumpkins at morning, and pumpkins at noon,  
If it was not for pumpkins we should be undone.

If barley be wanting to make into malt,  
We must then be contented, and think it no fault ;  
For we can make liquor, to sweeten our lips,  
Of pumpkins, and parsnips, and walnut tree chips.

Now while some are going, let others be coming,  
For while liquor's boiling it must have a scumming ;  
But I will not blame them, for birds of a feather,  
By seeking their fellows, are flocking together.

Then you whom the Lord intends hither to bring,  
Forsake not the honey for fear of the sting ;  
But bring both a quiet and contented mind,  
And all needful blessings you surely will find.

---

1 Patch. 2 Patching. 3 That's some consolation.

There is a story that two of the first settlers went to Nahant for fowl, and separated. One of them killed a seal among the rocks, and dragged him over on the north side of Pond Beach. He then went to shoot some birds, and when he returned, found a large bear feeding on his seal. He fired at him a charge of shot, which caused him to fall, and then beat him with his six foot gun till it broke. The bear stood up, wounded the man, and tore his clothes; but the man extricated himself, and ran into the pond, where he remained till his companion came. They then returned to the town, and informed the people, who went down in the evening and made a great fire on the beach, which was kept burning through the night, to prevent the bear from coming off. In the morning they went to Nahant and killed him.<sup>1</sup>

The General Court, for the first four years, consisted of the Governor, Deputy Governor, twelve Assistants or magistrates, and all who had obtained the privileges of freemen. Instead therefore of sending representatives, the whole number of freemen attended the court in person. An order was made that no persons should be admitted to the privileges of freemen, but such as were members of some church, and had certificates from their ministers that their opinions were approved. This policy was continued, till it was abrogated by an order of the King, in 1662.

After the Indians had become acquainted with the use of guns, and had seen their superiority over bows and arrows, they would give almost any amount in land, wampum, or beaver skins for them. This caused an apprehension of danger, and on the twenty eighth of September, the court ordered that "noe person whatsoever shall, either directly or indirectly, imploy or cause to be imployed, or to their power permit any Indian to vse any peece vpon any occasion or pretence whatsoever, under payne of xs. flyne for the first offence, and for the 2 offence to be flyned and imprisoned at the discretion of the court."<sup>2</sup>

The following order was passed for regulating the prices of labor. "It is ordered that no master carpenter, mason, Joiner, or bricklayer, shall take above 16d. a Day for their work, if they have meate and Drinke; and the second sort not above 12 d. a Day, under payne of xs. both to Giver and receiver." This order probably occasioned some dissatisfaction, as the

court, some months after, determined that wages should be left unlimited, "as men shall reasonably agree."<sup>1</sup>

A company of militia was organized, of which Richard Walker was Ensign; and, judging from their titles, Daniel Howe was Lieutenant, and Richard Wright Captain. The officers were not chosen by the people, but appointed by the Governor and court of Assistants. The company possessed two iron cannon, called "sakers," or "great guns."<sup>1</sup>

Much mischief was occasioned among the cattle for many years, by the wolves, which used to travel in companies of "ten or twelve."<sup>2</sup> On the thirtieth of September, Governor Winthrop thus remarks—"The wolves killed some swine at Saugus." On the ninth of November, the court ordered that if any Englishman killed a wolf, he should have one penny for each cow and horse, and one farthing for each sheep and swine in the plantation. Wolves appear to have been plenty, and very troublesome. Many of the pits which were dug to entrap them, are still to be seen in the woods, particularly on the north of Blood's swamp. It is said that a woman, as she was rambling in the woods for berries, fell into one of these pits, and was unable to extricate herself. In the evening a wolf paid her a very unceremonious visit, and came tumbling down at her side, through the bushes with which the pit was covered. Finding himself entrapped, and being as much afraid of the woman as she was of him, he retired to the opposite corner of the pit; and thus they sat through the night, ogling each other with any looks but those of an enamoured couple. In the morning some people came to the pit, from which they took the woman without injury, and prevented all future visits from her shaggy and unwelcome companion.

---

## 1631.

In the early part of this year provisions were very scarce, and many persons were obliged to depend for subsistence on ground nuts and clams. In some places fasts were appointed, as many of the poor were in danger of perishing. Wheat was sold for fourteen shillings sterling a bushel;<sup>3</sup> and Indian corn,

---

1 Col. Rec. 2 Wood. 3 \$3,11.

brought from Virginia, for eleven shillings.<sup>1</sup> The price of cattle for several years continued very high. A good cow was valued at twenty five pounds,<sup>2</sup> and a yoke of oxen at forty.<sup>3</sup>

On the third of February, the court laid a tax of sixty pounds, to make a palisade or defence about Newtown, now Cambridge. The proportion of Saugus and Marble Harbour, or Lynn and Marblehead, was six pounds.<sup>4</sup>

On the eighteenth of February, a vessel, owned by Mr. John Glover, of Dorchester, was wrecked on Nahant. The crew were all saved.<sup>5</sup>

The court, on the first of March, ordered, "that if any person within the Lymitts of this Patent, doe trade, trucke, or sell any money, either silver or golde to any Indian, or any man that knowe of any that shall soe doe and conceale the same, shall forfeit twenty for one. Further it is ordered, that whatever person hath received an Indian into their familye as a servt. shall discharge themselves of them by the 1th of May next, and that noe person shall hereafter entertain any Indian for a servt. without licence from the court."<sup>4</sup>

Montowampate, the Lynn Sachem, having been defrauded of twenty beaver skins, by a man in England, named Watts, went to Governor Winthrop, on the twenty sixth of March, to solicit his assistance in recovering their value. The Governor entertained him kindly, and gave him a letter to Emmanuel Downing, Esq. of London.<sup>5</sup> Tradition asserts that he went to England, where he was received with much respect, and obtained remuneration for his fur; but disliking the English delicacies, he hasted back to Saugus, to the enjoyment of his clams and succatash.

At this time there was no bridge over Saugus river, and the people who travelled to Boston, were obliged to ford the stream at a considerable distance from its mouth. The following extract from a letter written by Mr. John Endecott of Salem, to Governor Winthrop, on the twelfth of April, illustrates this custom. "Right Worshipful—I did hope to have been with you in person at the court, and to that end I put to sea yesterday, and was driven back again, the wind being stiff against us; and there being no canoe or boat at Saugus, I must have been constrained to go to Mistic, and thence about to Charlestown, which at this time I durst not be so bold, my body being at

---

1 §2,44. 2 §111,11. 3 §177,77. 4 Col. Rec. 5 Winthrop.



present in an ill condition to take cold, and therefore I pray you to pardon me."

A quarrel had arisen, a short time previous, between Mr. Endecott and Mr. Thomas Dexter, in which the Salem magistrate so far forgot his dignity as to strike Mr. Dexter, who complained to the court at Boston. It was on this occasion that Mr. Endecott wrote the letter from which the preceding extract is made. He thus continues—"I desired the rather to have been at court, because I hear I am much complained of by Goodman Dexter for striking him. I acknowledge I was too rash in striking him, understanding since it is not lawful for a justice of peace to strike. But if you had seen the manner of his carriage, with such daring of me, with his arms akimbo, &c. it would have provoked a very patient man.—He hath given out, if I had a purse, he would make me empty it; and if he cannot have justice here, he will do wonders in England; and if he cannot prevail there, he will try it out with me here at blows.—If it were lawful for me to try it at blows, and he a fit man for me to deal with, you should not hear me complain." The jury to whom the case was referred, rendered the following verdict on the third of May. "The Jury finds for the plaintiff, and cesses for damages X £." Beside the evidence of the blow, Mr. Endecott manifests somewhat of an irritable disposition in his letter; and Mr. Dexter was far from being a man who stood for nice points of etiquette. Some years afterward, having been injured or insulted by Samuel Hutchinson, he met him one day on the road, and jumping from his horse, bestowed "about twenty blows" on the poor man's "head and shoulders," to the no small danger and deray of his senses, as well as sensibilities.<sup>2</sup>

April 12, "It is ordered that every Captaine shall traine his companie on saterday in every weeke."<sup>1</sup>

May 18. "It is ordered that no person shall kill any wild swine, without a general agreement at some court."<sup>1</sup>

July 5. A tax of thirty pounds was laid, for the purpose of opening a canal from Charles river to Cambridge. The proportion of Lynn was one pound.<sup>1</sup>

Masconomond the Sachem of Agawam, now Ipswich, with some of his people, by acts of violence against the Kennebec Indians, called Tarentines, had incited them to revenge. On the eighth of August, about one hundred of the Tarentines land-

ed, from three canoes,<sup>1</sup> at Agawam, in the night, and killed seven Indians. In the assault they wounded Montowampate, and Wonohaqualan, who were on a visit at that place, and carried away the wife of the former a captive. Masconomond seems to have been regarded as censurable, for, on the fifth of July, the court passed an order, forbidding him to enter any Englishman's house within one year, under a penalty of ten beaver skins.<sup>2</sup>

The Lynn people were soon after alarmed by a report that the Tarentines intended an attack on them, and appointed men each night to keep a watch. Once, as Ensign Richard Walker was proceeding to relieve the guard, about midnight, he heard the bushes break near him, and felt something brush hard against his shoulder, which proved to be an arrow that had been shot at him, and passed through his coat and "buff waistcoat." As the night was dark, he could see no one, but turning toward the place whence the noise had proceeded, he discharged his gun, which being heavily loaded, split in pieces. He then assembled the guard and returned to the place, when he had another arrow shot through his clothes. Deeming it imprudent to proceed in the darkness against a concealed enemy, he desisted from further search till the morning. The people then assembled, and brought out their two iron cannon, which they discharged into the woods; after which the Indians gave them no further molestation.<sup>3</sup>

The Lynn queen was restored on the intercession of Mr. Abraham Shurd, who traded with the eastern Indians. She returned to Lynn on the seventeenth of September. For her ransom, the Tarentines demanded a quantity of wampum and beaver skins.<sup>4</sup>

On the twenty fifth of October, governor Winthrop, with several of his officers, visited Lynn on foot, through the ford of Saugus river. They passed the night in town, and on the next day went to Salem.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1632.

At the court, on the ninth of May, two men from each town were appointed, to consult with the Governor about raising a

---

1 Winthrop says 30. 2 Col. Rec. 3 Johnson. 4 Winthrop.

public stock. The persons selected for Lynn were, Captain Richard Wright, and another whose name was not recorded.

At the same court, "a proposition was made by the people, that every company of trained men might choose their own captain and officers; but the governor, giving them reasons to the contrary, they were satisfied without it."<sup>1</sup>

The Reverend Stephen Batchelor, with his family, arrived at Boston on Thursday, the fifth of June. He came in the ship William and Francis, captain Thomas, which sailed from London on the ninth of March, with about sixty passengers. He immediately came to Lynn, where his daughter resided, and fixed his abode here. He was now 71 years of age. In his company were six persons who had belonged to a church with him in England; and of those he constituted a church at Lynn, to which he admitted such as were desirous of becoming members, and immediately commenced the exercise of the ministerial duties, without installation. One of his first ministrations was to baptize four children, born before his arrival; two of whom, Thomas Newhall and Stephen Hussey, were born the same week. Thomas, being the oldest, was first presented, but Mr. B. put him aside saying "I will baptize my own child first."

The church at Lynn was the fifth in Massachusetts. The first was gathered at Salem 6 August, 1629; the second at Dorchester in June 1630; the third at Charlestown, 30 July, and afterward removed to Boston; the fourth at Watertown on the same day, and the fifth at Lynn in June 1632. The first meeting house was a small plain building, without bell or cupola, and stood on the eastern side of Shepard street. It was placed in a small hollow, that it might be the better sheltered from the winds, and was approached by descending several steps. Before this, the people of Lynn had no settled minister, but part of them attended public worship at Salem.

On the fourteenth of June, captain Richard Wright and several others were returning from Pemaquid, in a small vessel, loaded with goods to the value of about eight hundred dollars. At the mouth of Piscataqua river, one of the men began to light a pipe of tobacco, and was requested to desist, as there was some powder in the vessel; but he replied that he would take one pipe at whatever consequence. The fire was presently communicated to the powder, which exploded and de-

---

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop.

stroyed the vessel and goods. The man who occasioned the mischief, had his hands and feet blown off, and was killed; but the rest of the crew escaped.<sup>1</sup>

Governor Winthrop, in his History, August fourteenth, remarks; "This week they had, in barley and oats at Sagus, about twenty acres, good corn, and sown with the plough."

On the fourth of September, Richard Hopkins, of Watertown, was arraigned for selling a gun and pistol, with powder and shot, to Montowampate. The sentence of the court was, that he should "be severely whipt, and branded with a hott iron on one of his cheekes."<sup>2</sup> One of the Saugus Indians gave the information, on a promise of concealment: for his discovery would have exposed him to the resentment of his tribe.<sup>1</sup>

September 4. "Mr. Turner is chosen constable of Saugus for this year, and till a new be chosen, and did nowe take an oath to his place belonging."<sup>2</sup>

In consequence of a suspicion that the Indians were conspiring the destruction of the English, the neighbouring chiefs were called before the governor, on the fourteenth of September.<sup>1</sup> The readiness with which they appeared evinced their friendly disposition.

Mr. Batchelor had been in the performance of his pastoral duties about four months, when a complaint was made of some irregularities in his conduct. He was arraigned before the court at Boston, on the third of October, when the following order was passed. "Mr. Bachelr is required to forbear exercising his giftes as a past<sup>r</sup> or teacher publicquely in or Patent, unlesse it be to those he brought with him, for his contempt of authority, and till some scandles be removed."<sup>2</sup> This was the commencement of a series of difficulties which agitated the unhappy church for several years.

October 3. "It is ordered that Saugus plantation shall have liberty to build a ware upon Saugus Ryver; also they have promised to make and continually to keepe a goode foote bridge, upon the most convenient place there."<sup>2</sup> This wear was chiefly built by Mr. Dexter, for the purpose of taking bass and alewives, of which many were dried and smoked for shipping. It crossed the river near the Iron Works. The bridge was only a rude structure of timbers and rails.

"It is further ordered that no person shall take any tobacco publicquely, under pain of punishment; also that every one shall

pay 1d. for every time he is convicted of taking tobacco in any place."<sup>1</sup>

On the second of November, a vessel commanded by captain Pierce, and loaded with fish, of which Mr. John Humfrey was part owner, was wrecked off cape Charles, and twelve men drowned.<sup>2</sup>

November 7. "It is ordered that the Capt. shall train their companyes but once a monethe."<sup>1</sup>

"It is referred to Mr. Turner, Peter Palfrey, and Roger Conant, to sett out a proportion of land in Saugus for John Humfrey Esqr." Mr. Turner was also one of a committee to settle a difference, respecting the boundary line, between Charlestown and Cambridge.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1633.

Several vessels, which had been sent to Pemaquid, in pursuit of some pirates, returned in January. They stopped at Richman's Isle, now a part of Scarborough, in Maine; where they found Black William, whom they hanged, in revenge for the murder of Walter Bagnall, who was killed by the Indians on the third of October 1631. Governor Winthrop says that Bagnall "was a wicked fellow, and had much wronged the Indians." Thus terminated the existence of a chief, who had welcomed the English, and bestowed benefits on them.

In the course of a few months, Mr. Batchelor so far succeeded in regaining the esteem of the people, that the court, on the fourth of March, removed their injunction, that he should not preach in the colony, and left him at liberty to resume the performance of his public services.

At the same court, Mr. Thomas Dexter was ordered to "be set in the bilbowes, disfranchised, and fined X £. for *speaking* reproachful and seditious *words* against the government here established."<sup>1</sup> The bilbowes were a kind of stocks, like those in which poor Hudibras was confined. One of these elegant and commodious appendages of the law, was placed near the meeting house; where it stood the terror and punishment of

all such evil doers as spoke against government, chewed tobacco, or went to sleep in a sermon two hours long.

March 4. "Mr. Nathaniel Turner is chosen Capt. of the military company att Saugus."<sup>1</sup>

"Edward Howe is fined xx s. for selling stronge waters, contrary to order of court."<sup>1</sup>

Captain Turner gave "X £. towards the sea fort ; built for the defence of Boston harbor. Captain Richard Wright gave "400 ft. 4 inch planke," for the same purpose.<sup>1</sup>

At a town meeting, on the twelfth of July, the inhabitants made a grant to Mr. Edward Tomlins, of a privilege to build a mill on Strawberry Brook, a little below the Flax Pond. This was the second mill in the colony ; the first having been built at Dorchester, in the same year. At this time, the pond next above the Flax Pond, was a piece of meadow ground, and some years after, a dam was built, and the pond first flowed, by Mr. Edward Tomlins, from whom it is called Tomlins' Pond. In 1678, George Keysar testifies, that, "being at a town meeting in Linne Meeting house many years ago, Mr. Edward Tomlins made a complaint to the Towne of Linne, that there was not water enough in the great pond next to the Towne of Linne, to serve the mill to grind their grist in the summer time, and he desired leave of the Towne to make a dam in the upper pond to keep a head of water against the height of summer time, that soe he might have a supply of water to grind their Grist in the drought of summer, And the Towne of Linne granted him his request, that he should make a dam there, where the old trees lay for a bridg for all people to go over, instead of a bridg, and the place was granted to him freely by the Towne of Linne for ye use of ye Mill."<sup>2</sup> Clement Coldam junior testifies, "that the grant of ye old mill was in July 12, 1633, To Edward Tomlins, wh was ye Second mill in this collenyey, and after that the Towne saw that the mill could not supply the Towne, they gave leave to build an overshoot mill upon the same water, with a sluice called the old sluice, being built by Mr. Howell, the second owner of the mill, and then Mr. Howell did sell the same mill to John Elderkin, and Jon Elderkin did sell it to Mr. Bennett, and Mr. Bennet sold it to Goodman Wheeler, and Goodman Wheeler sold it to John Ballard, and John Ballard sold it to Henry Roads, and this I testifie, that the water to supply the mill with was grant-

ed to the mill, before any meadow in the town was granted to any man, (we mowing all common then,) and this I testifie that I kept the key of the old sluice for Mr. South, which is since about 27 or 28 years ago."<sup>1</sup>

The following description of ancient Saugus and Nahant is extracted from "Nevv England's Prospect," written this year by William Wood; which, he says, was undertaken, "because there hath been many scandalous and false reports past upon the Country, even from the sulphurous breath of every base ballad monger."

"The next plantation is Saugus, sixe miles Northeast from Winnesimet. This Towne is pleasant for situation, seated at the bottom of a Bay, which is made on the one side with the surrounding shore, and on the other side with a long sandy Beach. This sandy Beach is two miles long at the end, whereon is a necke of land called Nahant. It<sup>2</sup> is sixe miles in circumference, well wooded with Oakes, Pines, and Cedars. It is beside well watered, having, beside the fresh Springs, a great Pond in the middle, before which is a spacious Marsh. In this necke is store of good ground, fit for the Plow; but for the present it is onely used for to put young Cattle in, and weather goates, and Swine, to secure them from the Woolues; a few posts and rayles, from the low water markes to the shore, keepest out the Woolves and keepest in the Cattle. One Blacke William, an Indian Duke, out of his generosity, gave this place in generall to this plantation of Saugus, so that no other can appropriate it to himselfe.

"Vpon the South side of the sandy Beach the Sea beateth, which is a true prognostication to presage stormes and foule weather, and the breaking up of the Frost. For when a storme hath beene, or is likely to be, it will roare like Thunder, being heard sixe miles; and after stormes casts up great stores of great Clammes, which the Indians, taking out of their shels, carry home in baskets. On the North side of this Bay is two great Marshes, which are made two by a pleasant River which runnes between them. Northward up this river goes great store of Alewives, of which they make good Red Herrings; insomuch that they have been at charges to make them a wayre, and a Hering house, to dry these Herrings in; the last yeare were dried some 4 or 5 Last,<sup>3</sup> for an experiment, which proved very good; this is like to prove a great enrich-

---

1 Depo. 24 May 1677. 2 Nahant. 3 About 150 barrels,

ment to the land, (being a staple commoditie in other Countries,) for there be such innumerable companies in every river, that I have seen ten thousand taken in two houres, by two men, without any weire at all, saving a few stones to stone their passage up the river. There likewise come store of Basse, which the Indians and English catch with hooke and line, some fifty or three score at a tide. At the mouth of this river runnes up a great creeke<sup>1</sup> into that great Marsh, which is called Rumny Marsh, which is 4 miles long, and 2 miles broad, halfe of it being Marsh ground, and halfe upland grasse, without tree or bush; this Marsh is crossed with divers creekes, wherein lye great store of Geese and Duckes. There be convenient ponds for the planting of Duck coyes. Here is likewise belonging to this place, divers fresh meddowes, which afford good grasse; and foure spacious ponds, like little lakes, wherein is store of fresh fish, within a mile of the towne; out of which runnes a curious fresh brooke, that is seldom frozen by reason of the warmnesse of the water; upon this stream is built a water Milne, and up this river come Smelts and frost fish, much bigger than a Gudgeon. For wood there is no want, there being store of good Oakes, Walnut, Cedar, Aspe, Elme. The ground is very good, in many places without trees, and fit for the plough. In this place is more English tillage, than in all New England, and Virginia besides; which proved as well as could be expected; the corn being very good, especially the Barly, Rye, and Oates.

“The land affordeth to the inhabitants as many varieties as any place else, and the sea more; the Basse continuing from the middle of Aprill to Michaelmas,<sup>2</sup> which stayes not half that time in the Bay;<sup>3</sup> besides, here is a great deale of Rock cod and Macrill, insomuch that shoales of Basse have driven up shoales of Macrill, from one end of the sandie beach to the other; which the inhabitants have gathered up in wheelbarrowes. The Bay which lyeth before the Towne, at a low spring tyde will be all flatts for two miles together; upon which is great store of Musclebancques, and Clam bancques, and Lobsters amongst the rockes and grassie holes. These flatts make it unnavigable for shippes; yet at high water, great Boates, Loiters,<sup>4</sup> and Pinnaces of 20 and 30 tun, may saile up to the plantation; but they neede have a skillfull Pilote, because of many dangerous rockes and foaming breakers, that lye at the

---

<sup>1</sup> Chelsea River. <sup>2</sup> September 29. <sup>3</sup> Boston Harbour. <sup>4</sup> Lighters.



mouth of that Bay. The very aspect of the place is fortification enough to keepe off an unknowne enemy ; yet it may be fortified at litle charge, being but few landing places thereabout, and those obscure."

Of the health of New England, Mr. Wood remarks, " Out of that Towne from whence I came, in three years and a half, there died but three, one of which was crazed before he came into the land, the other two were Children, borne at one birth ; to make goode which losses, I have scene foure Children Baptized at one time."

Prefixed to Mr. Wood's book is the following address, written by some one in England, who signs himself S. W. probably Samuel Whiting.

Thanks to thy travel, and thyself, who hast  
Much knowledge in so small roome comptly plac'd,  
And thine experience thus a mount dost make,  
From whence we may New England's prospect take,  
Though many thousands distant ; therefore thou  
Thyself shall sit upon mount praise her brow.  
For if the man who shall the short cut find  
Vnto the Indies, shall for that be shrin'd,  
Sure thou deservest then no small praise who  
So short cut to New England here dost shew ;  
And if than this small thanks thou get'st no more  
Of thanks, I then will say the world's grown poor.

The " curious fresh brooke," which Mr. Wood notices, is Strawberry Brook, which possesses an uncommon degree of warmth. The Flax Pond, from which it descends, is fed by many springs beneath it, and the water flows out swiftly, for the supply of several mills. An old gentleman, who lived on its margin, said, that for a considerable distance from its source, he had never known it frozen during seventy years.

A tax made by the court, on the first of October, will show the relative importance of the several towns. The apportionment was, to Dorchester 80 pounds ; to Boston, Charlestown, Cambridge, Watertown, and Roxbury, each 48 pounds ; Lynn 36 ; Salem 28 ; Medford 12 ; Winessimet and Agawam, each 8 pounds. At several assessments, Lynn was in advance of Salem, and at one time of Charlestown.<sup>1</sup>

A scarcity of corn was occasioned this year, by the spoil which the swine made at harvest. On the fifth of November, the court ordered, " that no man shall give his swine any corn, but such as, being viewed by two or three neighbours, shall be

---

1 Col. Rec.

judged unfit for man's meat;" and "that every plantation may agree how many swine every person may keep."<sup>1</sup>

The court ordered, that every man in each plantation, except magistrates and ministers, should pay for three day's work, at one shilling and six pence each, for completing the fort in Boston Harbour.<sup>1</sup>

The ministers of Lynn and the western towns were, this year, in the practice of meeting at each others' houses, once in two weeks, to discuss some important question. The ministers of Salem were averse to this practice, fearing that it might eventuate in the establishment of a presbytery.<sup>2</sup>

On the fourth of December, corresponding with the sixteenth of new style, the snow was "knee deep," and the rivers frozen.<sup>2</sup>

In December the small pox prevailed among the Indians and destroyed great numbers.<sup>1</sup> Montowampate died, with most of his people. In some instances the English helped to bury whole families, yet escaped the contagion.<sup>3</sup> It is said that Montowampate and his brother, the sagamore of Winesimet, promised that if they recovered, they would live with the English, and serve their God.

---

## 1634.

The inconvenience of having the legislature composed of the whole number of freemen, and the danger of leaving the plantations exposed to the attacks of the Indians, induced the people to form a House of Representatives, who first assembled on the fourteenth of May. The representatives from Lynn were, Captain Nathaniel Turner, Mr. Edward Tomlins, and Mr. Thomas Willis.<sup>1</sup>

The persons whose names are first found at Lynn this year, are the following.

Boniface Burton was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman 6 May, 1635. He died 13 June, 1669, aged 113 years.<sup>4</sup>

Edward Dillingham lived in Nahant street, and removed to Sandwich in 1637.

---

1 Col. Rec. 2 Winthrop. 3 I. Mather. 4 Q. C. Files.

William Edmonds, was admitted a freeman in 1635, and died 4 August, 1693. His children were, 1. John. 2. Samuel, who married Elizabeth Bridges, 27 January, 1685.

Henry Feake was admitted a freeman 14 May, 1632, and removed to Sandwich in 1637.

John Hawkes, was admitted a freeman in 1634, and died 5 August, 1694.

Nathaniel Hathorne. His children were, 1. Ebenezer, who married Esther Witt, 26 December, 1683. 2. Nathaniel.

John Hall, was admitted a freeman 14 May, 1634. Edward Hall, son of John, was a farmer, and died in 1669. His children were, Joseph, Ephraim, Elizabeth, Rebecca, and Martha. His descendants remain.

William Hedge, was admitted a freeman in 1634, and removed to Sandwich in 1637.

John Hedge, was born in 1610.

Thomas Hubbard was admitted a freeman in 1634, and removed to Billerica.

John Humfrey, with his wife, the lady Susan, a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, arrived in July 1634. He brought with him a valuable present from Mr. Richard Andrews, an alderman of London, consisting of sixteen heifers, at this time valued at more than eighty dollars each. One of them was designed for each of the ministers of New England, and the remainder were for the poor.<sup>1</sup> He went to reside on his farm at Swampscot, which was laid out by order of the court. It contained five hundred acres, "between Forest River and the cliff." The bounds extended "a mile from the Seaside," and ran "to a great white oak by the Rock," and included "a spring south of the oak."<sup>2</sup> It is mentioned in the record, that the men who worked on this farm experienced inconvenience from the sand, which was blown into their eyes when carriages passed over the beach. The "Great oak" is yet standing, and it is hoped that it will be permitted to remain as a relic of ancient time.

O spare the tree, whose dewy tears  
Have fallen for two hundred years ;  
Beneath whose shade in days of old,  
The careful shepherd watched his fold ;  
On whose green top the eagle sat,  
To watch the fish hawk's watery weight ;

---

1 Winthrop. 2 Q. C. Files.

And oft in moonlight by whose side,  
The Indian wooed his dusky bride.  
It speaks to man of earlier time,  
Before the earth was stained with crime,  
Ere cannon waked our peaceful plains,  
When silence ruled her vast domains.  
O as you love antiquity,  
Spare, woodman, spare the Old Oak Tree.

Mr. Humfrey immediately entered on the duties of an Assistant, having been chosen before his arrival; and soon after built a windmill on Sagamore Hill.

Captain Thomas Marshall lived on the old Boston road, and was admitted a freeman in 1635. He was a member of the Artillery Company in 1640, and was six times chosen representative. He acquired his title of Captain from Oliver Cromwell, in whose wars he was a soldier, and was a man of great frankness and hospitality. Mr. John Dunton, in his *Journal*<sup>1</sup> says, "About two of the clock I reached Capt. Marshal's house, (which is half way between Boston and Salem,) here I staid to refresh nature with a pint of sack and a good fowl, Capt. Marshal is a hearty old gentleman, formerly one of Oliver's soldiers, upon which he very much values himself; he had all the history of the civil wars at his finger's end, and if we may believe him, Oliver did hardly any thing that was considerable without his assistance; and if I'd have staid as long as he'd have talked, he'd have spoil'd my ramble to Salem." He died 23 December 1689. His wife Rebecca died in August 1693. He had several children. 1. John, who was born 14 January, 1659; 2. Thomas, who removed to Reading.

Jonathan Negus was born in 1601, and was admitted a freeman in 1634.

Nicholas Potter was a mason.

Joseph Rednap was a wine cooper from London, and was admitted a freeman 3 September, 1634. He died on Friday, 22 January, 1686, aged 110 years.<sup>2</sup> He had a son Benjamin.

Daniel Salmon was born in 1610, and was a soldier in the Pequod war in 1636. He had a son Daniel, born 2 May, 1665.

Samuel Smith was a farmer, and lived at Swampscot. His descendants remain.

John Smith was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1633. He removed to Reading.

Henry Stevens was a servant to Mr. John Humfrey.

Samuel Symonds, died 26 July, 1675.

Thomas Talmadge, was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1634. He had a son Thomas.

Bray Wilkins was a farmer, and lived on the western side of the Flax Pond. He was admitted a freeman in 1634. He removed to Salem Village and there died at a very advanced age.

On the third of September, the court ordered, "that Mr. Edward Tomlins, or any other putt in his place, by the commissioners of war with the help of an assistant, shall have power to presse men and carts, for ordinary wages, to helpe towards making of such carriages and wheelles as are wanting for the ordinances."<sup>1</sup>

On training day, Captain Turner, by direction of Mr. Humfrey, went with his company to Nahant, to hunt the wolves by which it was infested.<sup>2</sup>

---

## 1635.

The dissensions which had commenced in Mr. Batchelor's church at an early period, began again to assume a formidable appearance. Some of the members, disliking the conduct of the pastor, and "withall making question whether they were a church or not,"<sup>3</sup> withdrew from the communion. In consequence of this, a council of ministers was held on the fifteenth of March. Being unable to produce a reconciliation, they appointed another meeting, and went to attend a lecture at Boston. Mr. Batchelor then requested the disaffected members to present their grievances in writing, but as they refused, he resolved to excommunicate them, and wrote to the ministers at Boston, who immediately returned to Lynn. After a deliberation of three days, they decided, that although the church had not been properly instituted, yet the mutual exercise of their religious duties had supplied the defect.

---

<sup>1</sup> Col. Rec.    <sup>2</sup> Q. C. Files.    <sup>3</sup> Winthrop.

The standard borne at this time was a Red Cross in a white field. This sacred emblem was not congenial to the feelings of Mr. Endecott, and he ordered it to be cut out from the banner at Salem. This occasioned much dissatisfaction among the people, and a committee of one person from each town, was appointed in May, to consider of the offence. They judged it to be "great, rash, and without discretion," and disqualified him, for one year, from bearing any public office.<sup>1</sup>

May 6. "There is 500 acres of land, and a freshe pond, with a little Island, conteyning about two acres, granted to John Humfrey, Esqr. lying between north and west of Saugus; provided he take no part of the 500 acres within 5 miles of any Town now planted. Also it is agreed that the inhabitants of Saugus and Salem shall have liberty to build foure howses upon the said Island, and to lay in such provisions as they shall judge Necessary for their use in tyme of neede."<sup>2</sup> The land thus laid out, was around Humfrey's Pond in Lynnfield, and extended half a mile on the eastern side, three fourths of a mile on the northern side, and on the west included Stone's Meadow.

On the sixteenth of August, happened one of the most tremendous storms ever known in New England. It beat down the corn, overturned houses, and tore up by the roots "many hundred thousands of trees."<sup>2</sup> The east wind blew with such violence, that the tide was turned before the ebb had half fallen, and the sea is said to have risen fourteen feet, so that the Indians were compelled to climb trees for safety, and some of them were drowned. A vessel was wrecked at Cape Ann, and twenty one persons lost, among whom was the Reverend John Avery, with his wife and six children. The only persons saved were Mr. Anthony Thacher and his wife.<sup>3</sup>

The following persons appear at Lynn this year.

Godfrey Armitage was a farmer, and was admitted a freeman in 1638. Thomas Armitage removed to Sandwich in 1637.

Robert Bootefish was admitted a freeman 6 May, 1635, and removed to Sandwich in 1637. He had a son Robert.

George Burt came to Lynn in 1635, and died 2 November, 1661. He was a farmer, and the value of his estate was £144,4,9. He had three sons. 1. George, who went to

---

1 Col. Rec. 2 Morton. 3 Winthrop.

Sandwich in 1637. 2. Hugh. 3. Edward, who removed to Charlestown.

John Carman, removed to Sandwich in 1637.

Edmund Freeman, removed from Lynn, and became one of the first proprietors of Sandwich in 1637. He was an Assistant of Plymouth Colony in 1640.

Dennis Gerry. Thomas Sayre was a farmer. Job Sayre removed to Long Island in 1640. Thomas Stanley.

Samuel Graves was a farmer, and lived on the Turnpike, west of the Floating Bridge, and from him that village has ever since been called Graves End. He had a son Samuel, whose descendants remain.

Thomas Tupper, removed to Sandwich in 1637. He had a son Thomas, who, in 1693, was a missionary to the Indians.

The difficulties in Mr. Batchelor's church did not cease with the decision of the council, but continued to increase; till Mr. Batchelor, perceiving no prospect of their termination, requested a dismissal for himself and first members, which was granted. The celebrated Hugh Peter, who had just arrived in America, was next employed to preach, and the people requested him to become their minister, but he preferred exercising the duties of that office at Salem. He was a very enterprising man, and procured a considerable amount, in money and goods, for the benefit of the colony; but he seems to have been much better adapted for a politician than a minister. He was a great favourite of Johnson, the Woburn poet, who thus alludes to his preaching, and to the difficulties at Lynn.

“ With courage, Peters, a soldier stout,  
In Wildernesse for Christ begins to war;  
Much worke he finds 'mongst people yet hold out,  
With fluent tongue he stops phantastie jar.”

He returned to England in 1641, and unhappily became involved in the ambitious designs of Cromwell—preached the funeral sermon over the “grey discrowned head” of the unfortunate Charles the First—and was executed for treason, on the sixteenth of October, 1660.

Among the benefactors of the colony, were some in this town. Mr. Dennis Gerry gave by his will, £300; Mr. Samuel Graves nearly £300; and Mr. Edmund Freeman twenty corslets.

Representatives, March 4, Nathaniel Turner, Timothy Tomlins; May 6, Nathaniel Turner, Edward How; September 2, Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins.

## 1636.

Mr. Batchelor had been readily dismissed from his pastoral charge, in the expectation that he would desist from its exercise or remove from town ; instead of which, he renewed his covenant with the persons who came with him from England, intending to continue his ministrations. The people opposed this design, and complained to the magistrates, who forbade his proceeding. Finding that he disregarded their injunctions, and refused to appear before them, they sent the marshall to compel him. He was brought before the court of Assistants, at Boston, in January, and discharged on engaging to leave the town within three months. There are reasons for supposing Mr. Batchelor to have been censurable ; but the court seem to have been somewhat arbitrary in compelling him to leave the town.

The Reverend Stephen Batchelor was born in England, in the year 1561, and received orders in the established Church. In the early part of his life he enjoyed a good reputation, but being displeased with some of the ceremonies of the Church, and refusing to continue his conformity, he was deprived of his permission to perform her services. The Church has been much censured for her severity, and all uncharitableness and persecution are to be deprecated ; but in ejecting her ministers for nonconformity, after they had approved her mode of worship, and engaging themselves in the support of her doctrines, the Church is no more censurable than all other communities, with whom the same practice is common. On leaving England, Mr. Batchelor went with his family to Holland, where he resided several years. He then returned to London, from which place he sailed on the ninth of March 1632, for New England. He came to Lynn about the middle of June, and continued his ministerial labours, with interruption, for about three years. He was admitted a freeman on the sixth of May, 1635, and removed from Lynn in February, 1636. He went to Ipswich, where he received a grant of fifty acres of land, and had the prospect of a settlement ; but some difficulty having arisen, he left the place. In the very cold winter of 1637, he went on foot, with some of his friends to Matakeese, now Yarmouth, a distance of about one hundred miles. There he intended to plant a town and establish a church ; but finding the difficulties great, and his company being all poor



men,"<sup>1</sup> he relinquished the design. He then went to Newbury, where, on the sixth of July, 1638, the town granted to him and his son-in-law, Christopher Hussey, two portions of land which had formerly been given to Edward Rawson, Secretary of State, and Mr. Edward Woodman. On the sixth of September, the General Court of Massachusetts, granted him permission to commence a settlement at Winicowett, now Hampton in New Hampshire. In 1639, the inhabitants of Ipswich voted to give him sixty acres of land on Whortleberry Hill, and twenty acres of meadow, if he would relinquish their previous grant of fifty acres, and reside with them three years; but he did not accept their invitation. On the fifth of July, he and Christopher Hussey sold their houses and lands in Newbury to Mr. John Oliver, for "six score pounds," and went to Hampton, where a town was begun, and a church gathered, of which Mr. Batchelor became the minister. He had not resided there long before dissensions commenced, and the people were divided between him and his colleague, Mr. Timothy Dalton. In 1641 he was accused of irregular conduct, and was excommunicated. Soon after, his house took fire, and was consumed, with nearly all his property. In 1643, he was restored to the communion, but not to the office of minister. In 1644, the people of Exeter invited him to settle with them; but the General Court of Massachusetts, on the twenty ninth of May, sent an order to forbid his settlement till they should grant permission. On the twentieth of April, 1647, he was at "Strawberry Bank," now Portsmouth, where he resided three years. In 1650, he married his third wife, being then nearly ninety years of age, and in May, was fined by the court, ten pounds, for not publishing his marriage according to law; half of which fine was remitted in October. In the same year the court passed the following order, in consequence of a matrimonial disagreement.

"It is ordered by this Court, that Mr. Batchelor and his wife shall lyve together as man and wife, as in this Court they have publiquely professed to doe, and if either desert one another, then hereby the Court doth order that ye Marshall shall apprehend both ye said Mr. Batchelor and Mary his wife, and bring them forthwith to Boston, there to be kept till the next Quarter Court of assistants, that farther consideration thereof may be had, both of them moving for a divorce, and this order

---

1 Winthrop

shall be sufficient warrant soe to doe, provided notwithstanding, that if they put in £50, each of them, for their appearance, with such sureties as the Commissioners, or any one of them for the County shall think good to accept of, that then they shall be under their baile to appear at the next Court of assistants, and in case Mary Batchelor shall live out of the jurisdiction, "without mutual consent for a time," that then the Clarke shall give notice to magistrate att Boston of her absence, that farther order may be taken therein."

Soon after this order, Mr. Batchelor returned to England, where he married his fourth wife, his third wife Mary being still living. In October, 1659, she petitioned the court, in the following words, to free her from her husband.

"To the Honored Govr Deputy Governor with the Magistrates and Deputies at the General Court at Boston.

The humble petition of Mary Bacheler Sheweth

Whereas your petitioner having formerly lived with Mr. Steven Bacheler a minister in this Collany as his lawfull wife & not unknown to divers of you as I conceive, and the said Mr. Bacheler upon some pretended ends of his owne hath transported himselfe untoould England for many years since and betaken himselfe to another wife as your petitioner hath often been credibly informed, and there continueth, whereby your petitioner is left destitute not only of a guide to her and her children, but also made uncapable thereby of disposing herselfe in the way of marriage to any other without a lawful permission, and having now two children upon her hands that are chargeable to her in regard to a disease God hath been pleased to lay upon them both, which is not easily curable, and so weakened her estate in prosecuting the means of cure that she is not able longer to subsist without utter ruining her estate, or exposing herself to the common charity of others, which your petitioner is loth to put herself upon, if it may be lawfully avoided as is well known to all or most part of her neighbours. And were she free from her engagement to Mr. Bachelor, might probably soe dispose of herselfe as that she might obtain a meet helpe to assist her to procure such means for her livelihood and the recovery of her children's health, as might keep them from perishing, which your petitioner to her great grief is much afraid of, if not timely prevented. Your petitioner's humble request therefore is that this Honored Court would be pleased seriously to consider her condition for matter of her relief in her freedom from the said Mr. Bachelor, and that she

may be at liberty to dispose of herself in respect of any engagement to him as in your wisdoms shall seem most expedient, and your petitioner shall humbly pray &c.

Mary Batchelor."<sup>1</sup>

At this time Mr. Batchelor must have been in the ninety sixth year of his age. How much longer he lived, and how many more wives he married, is unknown. He has long since gone to his last account, and his errors and follies, of whatever kind, must be left to the adjustment of that tribunal, before which all must appear. He had undoubtedly many virtues, or he would not have had many friends, and they would not have continued with him through all the changes of his fortune. Mr. Prince says that he was "a man of fame in his day, a gentleman of learning and ingenuity, and wrote a fine and curious hand." It was on his separation from the church at Lynn, with his subsequent misfortunes, that Mr. Edward Johnson wrote the following lines:

"Through ocean large Christ brought thee for to feede  
His wandering flock, with's word thou oft hast taught;  
Then teach thy selfe with others, thou hast need,  
Thy flowing fame unto low ebbe is brought.

Faith and obedience Christ full neare hath joined,  
Then trust on Christ, and thou again mayst be  
Brought on thy race, though now far cast behinde,  
Run to the end and crowned thou shalt be."

Mr. Batchelor had several children, four of whom, at least, were born in England. 1. Theodata, who married Christopher Hussey. 2. Deborah, who married John Wing of Lynn, and removed to Sandwich in 1637. 3. A daughter who married a Sanborn, and had three sons, whose names were John, Stephen, and William, all born before 1647. 4. Nathaniel, who removed to Hampton, where he had a son Nathaniel, born before 1647, and where some of his descendants remain. 5. A son, who removed to Reading, where he had a son Henry, who came to Lynn, where several families of his descendants remain.

The dissensions in the churches at Salem and Lynn, and the scarcity of provisions, occasioned a fast to be proclaimed, which was observed on the twenty first of February.<sup>2</sup>

On the third of March the court enacted that each town should have power to regulate its own affairs, to set fines on

offenders, not exceeding twenty shillings, and to choose a number of "prudential men," not exceeding seven, to order their municipal concerns.<sup>1</sup> This was the legal origin of those officers since called Selectmen, though some of the towns had similar officers before. They were at first chosen for only three months; and the town continued to choose seven till 1755, when the number was reduced to three. They had also a number of officers, who were called tythingmen, because each one was set over ten families, to observe their conduct, and report any violation of the public regulations.

Mr. John Humfrey and Captain Nathaniel Turner were appointed by the same court, to lay out the bounds of Ipswich.

Mr. Timothy Tomlins was licensed as a retailer, "to draw wine for the town of Saugus."<sup>1</sup>

A Quarterly Court was instituted at Salem, for the trial of ordinary cases, within the county. The members, or judges, were appointed annually. This year there were four, of whom Captain Nathaniel Turner was one. The first session commenced on the twenty seventh of June. A fine of ten shillings was required of Thomas Stanley, the constable of Lynn, for not appearing; and a record made in September, says, "Now it is in corn in Mr. William Wood's hands."<sup>2</sup>

The following inhabitants are found at Lynn this year.

James Axey was a farmer, a Representative in 1654, and died in 1669. His wife Francis died a few months after.<sup>2</sup>

John Bancroft died in 1637. He had two sons, Thomas and John. His descendants remain.

James Boutwell, farmer, freeman 1638, died 1651. His wife was Alice, and his children, Samuel, Sarah, and John.

Edward Burcham, freeman 1638, and Clerk of Writs 1645.

George Burrill was descended from an honorable family in England, and lived on the western side of Willis's Hill. He was by occupation a farmer, and had two hundred acres of land. He had three sons, 1. George. 2. Francis, born 1626, died 10 November, 1704. 3. John, born 1631, died 24 April, 1703. The name of his wife was Lois, and his children were, 1. Hon. John, born 15 October, 1658. 2. Sarah. 3. Thomas. 4. Anna. 5. Theophilus. 6. Lois. 7. Samuel. 8. Mary. 9. Hon. Ebenezer. 10 Ruth.

Timothy Cooper, farmer, died March, 1659, His children were, Mary, Hannah, John, Timothy, Dorcas, and Rebecca.

William Harcher died 1661. He had a son William, who removed to Long Island in 1640.

Edward Howell, farmer, freeman 1638, had 500 acres of land, and lived on the bound of Saugus and Reading.

Philip Kertland was the first Shoemaker known at Lynn. He removed to Long Island in 1640. His son Philip remained at Lynn, married Ruth Pierce, and died 27 June, 1688.

Nathaniel Kertland, farmer, was buried 27 December, 1686. His children were, Nathaniel, Sarah and Priscilla.

Francis Lightfoot, freeman 1636, died 1646. He came from London, and the name of his wife was Anne.

Oliver Purchis, freeman 1636, Representative 1660, Assistant 1685, Town Clerk 1686, removed to Concord 1691, and died 20 November, 1701, aged 88 years.

Thomas Townsend was a farmer, lived near the Iron Works, and died 22 Dec. 1677. His sons were John and Thomas.

Nicholas Batter, farmer, freeman 1638. Hugh Burt, born 1591. John Cooper, farmer, removed to Cambridge. Zachary Fitch, freeman 1638, went to Reading. William Hammond, freeman 1636, died 1637. John Kertland. Anthony Newhall. John Pool, farmer, whose descendants remain. William Walton, freeman 1636. Matthew West, freeman 1637.

Representatives. March 3, Nathaniel Turner, William Wood; May 3, N. Turner, Edward Howe; September 8, Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.

The year 1636 has been rendered memorable by the commencement of a great war with Sassacus, sachem of the Pequod Indians. Some of his tribe had murdered a boats' crew in Connecticut river, which induced the white people to take up arms. On the sixteenth of June, Governor Vane directed Lieutenant Howe to have the military company at Lynn in readiness; and in August a requisition was made for ninety men from Massachusetts, who were divided into four companies, one of which was commanded by Captain Turner. They had orders to put to death all the red men on Block Island, and to demand the murderers of the Pequods, with a thousand fathom of wampum, and some of their children as hostages. On arriving at Block Island, they destroyed seven canoes and sixty wigwams, with many acres of corn, and killed one Indian, the rest having fled. They then went to Pequod, now New London, where they burnt the canoes and wigwams, and killed thirteen Indians. They returned on the fourteenth of September.

The Rev. Samuel Whiting arrived from England in June, and was installed pastor of the church at Lynn on Tuesday, the eighth of November. The council remained two days, and found much difficulty in organizing the church, which was composed of only six members, beside the minister. The dissensions which existed in this and the other churches, with all the profitless controversies by which they have since been agitated, may be fairly referred to the separation from the Church, for whose increase and welfare the emigrants, on their departure, expressed so high a regard, and which, in the wilderness, they suffered themselves so soon to forget. Practices were early introduced, which have since been generally regarded as injudicious, and the way was opened for the endless diversity of individual opinion. The reading of the Bible as a part of the public service was considered a superstitious practice; and even the Lord's prayer, that pure and perfect pattern of address to the Deity, was seldom heard. Ministers began to be ordained by those who had no authority, the ceremony of marriage was commonly performed by the civil magistrate, and the dead were buried without prayer. There were many who disapproved these departures from the salutary practice of their early devotion, and among these were several of the ministers, who, when they found the people resolved entirely to abandon the Church, left them, and returned home. Though many years have passed, the diversities of opinion respecting the faith and order of the Gospel, seem in no degree to have lessened; but surely if peace and happiness are objects of regard, then it is desirable that men should be united in their view of a subject, which of all others is the most important. The benefits of Christianity might have been much more extensively diffused, had its advocates been as industrious in promoting union, as they have been in devising ways by which they might differ. The Church, like the light of heaven, is not restricted, but universal; and how transcendently glorious above all others, in modern times, will be the day, on which it can be said that men have united in her support—when each religious sect shall relinquish its distinguishing characteristics, and the union of the Church be complete. Such a union is both the duty and the interest of Christians, and would conduce more to the conversion and happiness of the world, than all the partial and divided exertions which have been made for centuries.





LADY SUSAN HUMPHREY

Parted from her Child

1641



## 1637.

On Tuesday, the tenth of January, Captain Nathaniel Turner's house, on Sagamore Hill, was burnt. The fire originated in an oven, about midnight. The family fortunately escaped.<sup>1</sup>

On the eighteenth of April, one hundred and seventy five men were detached, to be sent against the Pequods.<sup>2</sup> Boston furnished 26, Lynn 21,<sup>3</sup> Cambridge 19, Salem 18, Ipswich 17, Watertown 14, Dorchester 13, Charlestown 12, Roxbury 10, Newbury 8, Hingham 6, Weymouth 5, Medford 3, and Marblehead 3. Captain Turner commanded the men from Lynn, and the whole were under the direction of Captain Israel Stoughton. The Connecticut troops attacked the Pequods on the morning of the twenty sixth of May. Guided by an Indian, they arrived some hours before day break at the foot of a small hill, on which Sassacus had built a rude fort, surrounded by a palisade of trees. The enclosure contained a large number of wigwams, in which the Indians were asleep. The soldiers came to the fort in silence, discharged their muskets on the slumbering natives, and then set fire to the camp. The wigwams, composed of bark, mats, and dry limbs, were instantly in a blaze over the heads of the astonished Indians, and the flames wound up their spiral wreaths among the tall trees of the forest, catching upon their branches, and sending up a thousand combined fires, in one huge pyramid of flame toward the sky, edged by a deep and palpable cloud of black smoke, which soon spread itself far over the adjacent country, giving awful warning of the fate of the bravest of the Pequot race. Of nearly six hundred Indians, many of whom were women, and old men, and helpless children, who had laid down that night to sleep, beneath the shelter of their own frail roofs, scarce ten escaped. The dead and the dying lay piled in wide confusion upon the ground, amid the wreck of their ruined home; and the smoke of the smouldering bodies and the burning blood went up toward heaven for many days. The soldiers from Lynn did not arrive till some days after the massacre, and returned on the twenty sixth of August. The unfortunate Sas-

---

1 Winthrop. 2 Col. Rec. 3 Sixteen at first, and five afterward.

sacus, after this desolation of his tribe, and ruin of his hopes, fled to the Mohawks. He was soon after murdered, as was supposed, by an Indian of the Narragansett tribe, who were his enemies, and a lock of his hair was sent to Governor Winthrop. Thus perished Sassacus, the last and noblest of the Pequods; a Chief, who, in the struggles of Greece, would have received the fame of a hero,—in the war of American Freedom, the praise of a patriot.

On the twenty third of June, Governor Winthrop visited Lynn, and was escorted by the inhabitants to Salem. He returned on the twenty-eighth, travelling in the night, in consequence of the heat, which was so excessive that several persons died.<sup>1</sup> There were at this time but thirty-seven ploughs, in the whole colony, most of which were at Lynn.<sup>2</sup>

The Rev. Thomas Cobbet arrived from England on the twenty-sixth of June, and was soon after installed a colleague in the ministry with Mr. Whiting.<sup>1</sup> Though a small portion only of the people had assented to the covenant, yet there were many inhabitants who needed the public services of the ministry; and the ministers were not then settled by the covenanters, but by a general vote of the town. Mr. Whiting was styled the pastor, as being the principal, and Mr. Cobbet was called teacher, an office in some degree subordinate, though his talents were superior.

This year a large number of people removed from Lynn, and commenced a new settlement at Sandwich. The grant of the township was made on the third of April, by the General Court of Plymouth Colony. "It is ordered that these ten men of Saugus, namely, Edmund Freeman, Henry Feake, Thomas Dexter, Edward Dillingham, William Wood, John Carman, Richard Chadwell, William Almy, Thomas Tupper, and George Knott, shall have liberty to view a place to sit down on, and have sufficient land for three score families, upon the conditions propounded to them by the Governor and Mr. Winslow."<sup>3</sup> The other proprietors were, George Allen, Thomas Armitage, Anthony Besse, Mr. Blackmore, George Bliss, Thomas Boardman, Robert Bootefish, William Braybrook, John Briggs, Thomas Burge, Richard Burne, George Burt, Thomas Butler, Thomas Chillingworth, Edmund Clark, George Cole, John Dingley, Henry Ewer, John Friend, John Fish,

---

1 Winthrop. 2 Graham. 3 Plymouth Rec.

Nathaniel Fish, Jonathan Fish, Peter Gaunt, Andrew Hallet, William Harlow, William Hedge, Joseph Holway, William Hurst, John Joyce, Richard Kirby, Thomas Lander, John Miller, William Newland, Benjamin Noye, Mr. Potter, James Skippe, George Slawson, Michael Turner, John Vincent, Peter Wright, Nicholas Wright, Richard Wade, John King, John Winsor, Mr. Wollaston, and Thomas Willis. Their minister was the Rev. William Leveridge.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Dexter and Mr. Willis did not remove at this time.

The following persons were also at Lynn as early as this year.

Abraham Belknap. He had two sons, Abraham and Jeremy. From him descended Dr. Jeremy Belknap, the historian of New Hampshire.

Edmund Bridges died in 1686. The name of his wife was Mary, and his sons were John and Josiah.

Jenkin Davis, joiner, freeman 1637, died 1661. His wife was Sarah, and he had a son John.

Joseph Floyd lived in Fayette street, and afterwards removed to Boston. In 1666, his house and six acres of land, bounded "west next the town common and east next a little river,"<sup>2</sup> were sold for thirty eight pounds to "Henry Silsbe of Ipswich." The little river is Stacey's Brook.

Christopher Foster, farmer, freeman 1637, lived in Nahant street.

George Fraile died 9 December 1663. He had a son George, who was accidentally killed in 1669, by "a piece of timber, of about fifteen hundred weight, rolling over him."<sup>3</sup>

Nathaniel Handforth was a "haberdasher" from London, and lived on the north side of the common. He was buried 13 September 1687, aged 79 years.

Thomas Ivory, died in 1664. He had a son Thomas.

Richard Johnson came over in 1630, and lived with Sir Richard Saltonstall at Watertown. He was admitted a freeman in 1637, and in the same year came to Lynn, and settled as a farmer on the eastern end of the common. He died in 1666, aged 54 years. His children were, Daniel, Samuel, Elizabeth, and Abigail. His descendants remain.

Thomas Keysar was mate of a vessel which sailed from Boston, commanded by James Smith.

---

1 Sandwich Rec. 2 Essex Reg. Deeds. 3 Q. C. Files.

Thomas Lighton, farmer, freeman 1638, lived in Franklin street. He was Representative in 1646, and Town Clerk in 1672. He died 8 August 1697. His children were Thomas, Margaret, Samuel, Rebecca and Elizabeth.

Richard Longley, farmer, had two sons. 1. William, freeman 1638, and Clerk of the Writs 1655. 2. Jonathan.

John Pierson, farmer, lived in Nahant street, and removed to Reading. The name of his wife was Madeline.

Richard Roolton had a son Edmund, who died 4 March 1675.

Richard Sadler, farmer, freeman 1638, came from Worcester in England. He lived near the great rock in Holyoke street. He was a member of the Quarterly Court in 1639, and Clerk of the Writs in 1640. He had a son Richard, born 1610, who returned to England in 1647, and was ordained 16 May 1648.

William Andrews, Richard Brooks, Goodman Cox, Goodman Crosse, John Deacon, blacksmith, John Elderkin, William George, Francis Godson, Henry Gaines, farmer, John Gillow, died 1673, the name of his wife was Rose, Thomas Halsye, farmer, James Hewes, Robert Hewes, William Hewes, Jeremy Howe, John Hudson, Samuel Hutchinson, Thomas Hutchinson, Philip Kneeland, Thomas Paine, freeman 1641, Robert Parsons, freeman 1638, Thomas Parker, farmer, Joseph Pell, freeman 1638, Nicholas Poor, William Partridge, Thomas Read, Isaac Robinson, Jarrett Spenser, freeman 1637, Michael Spenser, freeman 1638, Josias Stanbury, George Taylor, farmer, freeman 1638, his wife Elizabeth died in 1668, William Thorn, removed to Long Island in 1642, Mr. Wathin, George Welbye, Richard Wells, Edward West, Thomas Wheeler, farmer, freeman 1637, Nathaniel Whiteridge.

The members of the Quarterly Court this year were John Humfrey and Edward Howe.

In a tax of £400, the proportion of Lynn was £28,16. The Court ordered that no person should make any cakes or buns, except "for burials, marriages, and such like special occasions."<sup>1</sup>

A town meeting was held this year, in which Daniel Howe, Richard Walker, and Henry Collins, were chosen a committee to divide the lands. or as it was expressed in the record, "to

lay out ffarmes.”<sup>2</sup> The land was laid out in those parts of the town best adapted to cultivation, and the woods were reserved as common property, and called the “town cominon,” not being divided till 69 years after.

On the fifteenth of November, the name of the town was changed from Saugus to Lynn. The name was given in respect to Mr. Whiting and others, who came from the town of Lynn Regis, or King’s Lynn, in Norfolk, England. The record of the court on this occasion consists of only four words, “Saugust is called Lin;” which relates only to the alteration of the name; the town having been incorporated in 1630, by admission as a member of the colony. It was bounded on the west by Boston, which then included Chelsea, and on the east by Salem.

---

## 1638.

The committee appointed by the town to divide the lands, completed their task, and a book was provided in which the names of the proprietors, with the number of acres allotted to each, were recorded. That book is lost, but a copy of the first three pages has been preserved in the files of the Quarterly Court at Salem, from which the following is transcribed. I have taken the justifiable liberty, in this instance, to spell the words correctly, and to supply a few omissions, which are included in brackets. The word “ten,” which is added to many of the allotments, implies that a separate lot of ten acres was granted.

### PAGE I.

“These lands following were given to the inhabitants of the town of Lynn, Anno Domini 1638.

To the Right Honorable the Lord Brooks, 800 acres, as it is estimated.

To Mr. Thomas Willis, upland and meadow, 500 acres, as it is estimated.

Mr. Edward Holyoke, upland and meadow, 500 acres, as it is estimated.

Henry Collins, upland and meadow, 80 acres, and ten.

Mr. [Joseph] Floyd, upland and meadow, 60 acres, and ten.

Edmund and Francis Ingalls, upland and meadow, 120 acres.

Widow Bancroft, 100 acres.

Widow Hammond, 60 acres.

George Burrill, 200 acres.

John Wood, 100 acres.

Thomas Talmage, 200.

Nicholas Brown, 200.

William Cowdrey, 60.

Thomas Loughton, 60.

John Cooper, 200.

Allin Breed, 200.

John Pool, 200.

Edward Howe, 200, and ten.

Thomas Sayre, 60.

Job Sayre, 60.

Thomas Chadwell, 60.

William Walton, 60.

Christopher Foster, 60.

William Ballard, 60.

Josias Stanbury, 100.

Edmund Farrington, 200.

Nicholas Potter, 60.

William Knight, 60.

Edward Tomlins, 20, and twenty.

[" Mr." ] South, 100.

Boniface Burton, 60.

John Smith, 60.

Mr. Edward Howell, 500.

PAGE II.

To Nicholas Batter, 60.

Mr. [Richard] Sadler, 200, and the rock by his house.

Joseph Armitage, 60.

Godfrey Armitage, 60.

To Matthew West, upland and meadow, 30, and ten,

George Farr, 30, and ten.

James Boutwell, 60 acres.

Zachary Fitch, 30, and ten.

Jarrett Spenser, 30 acres.  
Jenkin Davis, 30, and ten.  
George Taylor, 30, and ten.  
[William] Thorn, 30, and ten.  
Thomas Townsend, 60.  
Thomas Parker, 30, and ten.  
Francis Lightfoot, 30, and ten.  
Richard Johnson, 30, and ten.  
Robert Parsons, 30, and ten.  
Edward Burcham, 30, and ten.  
Anthony Newhall, 30.  
Thomas Newhall, 30.  
Thomas Marshall, 30, and ten.  
Michael Spenser, 30.  
Timothy Tomlins, 80.  
[William] Harcher, 20.  
Richard Roolton, 60.  
[Nathaniel] Handforth, 20.  
Thomas Hudson, 60.  
Thomas Halsye, 100.  
Samuel Bennett, 20.  
John Elderkin, 20.  
Abraham Belknap, 40.  
Robert Driver, 20.  
Joseph Rednap, 40.  
[John] Deacon, 20.  
Philip Kertland, senior, 10.

## PAGE III.

To Philip Kertland, junior, 10.  
[Goodman] Crosse, 10.  
Hugh Burt, 60.  
[Goodman] Wathin, 10.  
Richard Brooks, 10.  
Francis Godson, 30.  
George Welbye —  
William Partridge, upland, 10 acres.  
Henry Gains, 40.  
Richard Wells, 10.  
[Joseph] Pell, 10.  
John White, 20.  
Edward Baker, 40.

James Axey, 40.  
 William Edmonds, 10.  
 Edward Ireson, 10.  
 Jeremy Howe, 20.  
 William George, 20.  
 Nathaniel Whiteridge, 10.  
 George Frail, 10.  
 Edmund Bridges, 10.  
 Richard Longley, 40.  
 Thomas Talmadge, junior, 20.  
 Thomas Coldam, 60.  
 Adam Hawkes, upland, 100.  
 Thomas Dexter, 350.  
 Daniel Howe, upland and meadow, 60.  
 Richard Walker, upland and meadow, 200.  
 Ephraim Howe, next to the land of his father, upland, 10.  
 [Thomas] Ivory, 10.  
 Timothy Cooper, 10.  
 Samuel Hutchinson, 10, by estimation.  
 Mr. Samuel Whiting, the pastor, 200.  
 Mr. Thomas Cobbet, the teacher, 200.

"These three pages were taken out of the town book of the  
 Records of Lynn, the 10th. 1 mo. Anno Domini 59, 60, [10  
 March 1660,] by me,

ANDREW MANSFIELD, Town Recorder."

Though the 8630 acres of land, thus laid out among 100  
 families, comprised the best portion of Lynn and Saugus,  
 the people thought they had not sufficient room, and petitioned  
 the court for more. On the thirteenth of March, "Lynn was  
 granted 6 miles into the country ; and Mr. Hawthorne and Leift  
 Davenport to view and inform how the land beyond lyeth,  
 whether it be fit for another plantation or no." The land laid  
 out by this order was for many years called Lynn End, and  
 now constitutes the town of Lynnfield. The court afterwards,  
 very prudently ordered, that the Governor and Assistants should  
 "take care that the Indians have satisfaction for their right at  
 Lynn."

The preceeding winter was extremely severe, the snow con-  
 tinued from November sixteenth, to the fourth of April, and the



spring was so cold that the farmers were compelled to plant their corn "two or three times."<sup>1</sup>

The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company was organized on Monday, the first of June. Mr. Daniel Howe of Lynn was chosen Lieutenant. In the afternoon, between the hours of three and four, there was a very great earthquake. People found it difficult to stand, and furniture and chimneys were thrown down. Shocks were repeated for several weeks. Other members of the Artillery Company from Lynn, at different times, were, in 1638, Nathaniel Turner, Richard Walker, and Edward Tomlins; in 1639, Samuel Bennet; in 1640, John Humfrey, and Thomas Marshall; in 1641, John Humfrey, jr. Robert Bridges and Adam Ottley; in 1642, John Cole; in 1646 William Clark; in 1673, John Taylor; in 1694, Thomas Baker; in 1717, Benjamin Gray; and in 1733, Benjamin Hallowell.

The tax laid upon the town this year, at two assessments, was £105 sterling, in a general tax of £1500.

William Knight came from Salem this year, and was admitted a freeman on the second of May. He died in 1654.

George Keysar was a tanner at Swampscot. He was admitted a freeman 14 December. He married Elizabeth Holioke, and had a son named Elizur. He died at Salem in September 1690.

Other inhabitants were, Peter Busgat, Isaac Disberoe, Richard Graves, Thomas Graves, James Hubbard, Robert Lee, and Henry Phillips, and William Wells.

A settlement was this year begun at Hampton, in New Hampshire, by Rev. Stephen Batchelor and others. The grant of the court was made on the sixth of September, to Mr. Batchelor, Mr. Christopher Hussey, widow Mary Hussey, and fourteen others, the principal of whom, at an early period, were inhabitants of Lynn.

Some of the farmers were in the practice of pasturing their cows in one drove, and watching them alternately. When it came to Mr. John Gillow's turn, an evil disposed person detained him in conversation, till the cows strayed into a field of corn, where two of them ate so much that they became sick, and one died. It happened that these two cows belonged to the man who caused the mischief, who brought an action against Mr. Gillow before the court of Assistants at Boston, on the seventh of September. As it was proved that the man

---

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop.

had boasted of having designed that the cattle should stray, the case was decided in Mr. Gillow's favor.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1639.

The town continued to receive accessions of inhabitants, among whom this year were the following.

Andrew Mansfield came from Exeter, in England, to Boston, in 1636. He was by occupation a farmer, and lived in Boston street. The neighbourhood of his residence was from him called Mansfield's End. He was Town Clerk in 1660, and died in 1692, aged 94 years. He had a son Andrew, born in 1630, who was chosen Representative in 1680. His descendants remain.

Edmund Lewis, farmer, freeman 1636, came from England, and was one of the first settlers at Watertown, where, in 1638 he was appointed to lay out lands. He came to Lynn this year, and was the first person known to have resided in the street which is called by his name. He died January 1651. The name of his wife was Mary, and his children were, John, Thomas, James, and Nathaniel. His brother, William Lewis, was one of the first settlers at Roxbury, and afterward removed to Boston. His children were 1 John, born November 1635. 2 Christopher, born in 1636. 3 Lydia, born 25 December, 1639. 4 Josiah, born 28 July, 1641. 5 Isaac, born 15 April, 1644, from whom the author of these annals is descended. The posterity of these two brothers are numerous. At one time there were six men of the family at Lynn named John.

Thomas Farrar, farmer, lived in Nahant Street, and died 23 February 1694. His children were, Thomas, Hannah, Sarah, Susannah, and Elizabeth.

John Tarbox. His children were, 1 John. 2 Samuel, who married Rebecca Armitage 14 November, 1665, had eighteen children, and died 12 September, 1715, aged 93 years. 3 A daughter. His descendants remain.

John Farrington, Jervas Garford, freeman, 1639, Benjamin Gillow, Thomas Gillow, William King, Michael Milner, remov-

---

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop.

ed to Long Island 1640, John Pickering, removed to Salem, William Taylor, Edward Taylor, removed to Reading.

Another grant of land was made to the town, on the seventh of September. "The petition of the Inhabitants of Lynn, for place for an inland plantation at the head of their bounds, is granted them, 4 miles square, as the place will afford; upon condition that the petitioners shall, within two years, make some good proceeding, in planting, so as it may be a village fit to contain a convenient number of inhabitants, which may in dewe time have a church there; and so as such as shall remove to inhabit there, shall not withall keepe their accommodations in Linn above 2 years after their removal to the said village, vpon pain to forfeite their interest in one of them at their election; except this court shall see fit cause to dispense further with them."<sup>1</sup> The settlement thus begun, was at first called Lynn Village, and afterwards Reading. The land was purchased of the Indians for ten pounds sixteen shillings, and the deed was signed by Sagamore George, his sister Abigail, and Quanapowitt. Thus the town included within its boundary the five modern towns, Lynn, Saugus, Lynnfield, Reading, and South Reading.

Two other settlements were this year begun by people who removed from Lynn; one at Barnstable, and the other at Yarmouth, where Mr. Batchelor and his company attempted to settle.

The General Court allowed the town fifty pounds to build a bridge over Saugus river, and fifty shillings annually to preserve it in repair. A tax of one thousand pounds was laid, of which the proportion of Lynn was £79, 19, 9. The court forbade the people to spread bass or cod fish upon their lands for the purpose of enriching the soil; and passed the following order for the regulation of Ladies' dress. "No garment shall be made with short sleeves; and such as have garments with short sleeves, shall not wear the same, unless they cover the arm to the wrist; and hereafter, no person whatever shall make any garment for women, with sleeves more than half an ell wide;"<sup>1</sup> that is, twenty two and a half inches. On the third of December, the court laid a fine of ten pounds upon the town, for not maintaining a watch against the Indians.

## 1640.

In the short space of ten years from its settlement, we have seen five other towns deriving their origin from Lynn; yet the place continued to abound with inhabitants, and this year beheld the commencement of the sixth. About "forty" families, "finding themselves straitened,"<sup>1</sup> left the town with the design of settling a new plantation. They invited Mr. Abraham Pierson of Boston to become their minister, who with seven of the emigrants entered into a church covenant before they left Lynn. They sailed in a vessel commanded by Captain Daniel Howe, to Scout's Bay, in the western part of Long Island, where they purchased land of Mr. James Forrett, agent of Lord Stirling, and agreed with the Indians for their right. On receiving information of this, the Dutch laid claim to that part of the island, on account of a previous purchase of the Indians, and sent men to take possession, who set up the arms of the Prince of Orange on a tree. The Lynn people, disregarding the claims of the Dutch, cut down the trees and began to build. Captain Howe likewise took down the Prince's arms, and instead thereof an Indian drew a very "unhandsome face." This conduct highly incensed the Dutch governor, William Kieft, whom Mr. Irving, in one of his humorous works, has characterized by the appellation of "William the Testy," but whom Mr. Hubbard denominates "a discreet man," who, on the thirteenth of May, sent Cornelius Van Ten Hoven the secretary, the undersheriff, a sergeant, and twenty five soldiers, to break up the settlement. They found eight men, with a woman and an infant, who had erected one cottage, and were engaged in building another. They took six of the men, whose names were John Farrington, William Harcher, Philip Kertland, Nathaniel Kertland, Job Sayre, and George Wells, and brought them before the governor. These he examined on oath, and then put them in prison, where they remained while he wrote a Latin letter to the governor of Massachusetts. To this Mr. Winthrop replied, in the same language, that he would neither maintain the Lynn people in an unjust action, nor suffer them to be injured. On the reception of this reply, the Dutch governor liberated the men, after they had signed an agreement to leave the place. They accord-

---

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop.

ingly removed more than eighty miles, to the eastern part of the island, where they purchased land of the Indians, and planted a town, which, in remembrance of the place from which they sailed in England, they called Southampton.

At the court, on the thirteenth of May, William Hathorne, Samuel Symonds, and Timothy Tomlins, were appointed to lay out "the nearest, cheapest, safest, and most convenient way" between Lynn and Winnesinet ferry.<sup>1</sup>

Lynn village, now South Reading, was ordered to be exempted from taxes, as soon as seven houses should be built, and seven families settled.<sup>1</sup>

The court ordered that grain should be received as a lawful payment for debts; Indian corn at 5s. rye at 6s. 8d. and wheat at 7s. a bushel. The price of a cow was £5.<sup>2</sup>

A tax of £1200 was laid upon the colony. The proportion of Lynn was £85.

Mr. Richard Sadler was appointed Clerk of the Writs. The duties of this office were, to fill warrants in civil actions, and to keep a record of births and deaths. It was legally distinct from the office of Town Clerk, who was at the first called the Town Recorder, though in many instances both offices were held by the same individual.

Mr. Humfrey's barn at Swampscot, with all his corn and hay, to the value of one hundred and sixty pounds, was burnt by the carelessness of his servant, Henry Stevens, in setting fire to some gun powder. At the court of Assistants, on the first of November, "Henry Stevens, for firing the barn of his master, Mr. John Humfrey, he was ordered to be servant to Mr. Humfrey for 21 years from this day, towards recompensing him."<sup>1</sup> The court afterward allowed Mr. Humfrey for his loss and his good services, £250.<sup>3</sup>

During a sermon this year, a man named Taylor became distracted. It was by some supposed to have been occasioned by his selling the milk which his cow yielded, as he came over in the ship, at too dear a rate. Governor Winthrop expresses a doubt of this being the cause.

There was one woman in the town at this time, who contended that all things ought to be common, as at one time among the early Christians; but she found it difficult to persuade the people that she had as good a right to their property as themselves. She went "from house to house," helping her-

---

1 Col. Rec. 2 \$22,22. 3 \$1,111 11.

self to such little accommodations as she wished, till her demands became so extravagant that she was brought before the Quarterly Court at Salem. On the twenty ninth of September the following record was made. "Mary Bowdwell of Lyn, for her exorbitancy, not working, but liveing idly, and stealing, and taking away other victuals, pretending communitie of all things; The court sentence that she shall be whipped; but throwe their clemency she was only admonished, and respited till next courte."

This year a new version of the Psalms was made for public worship. It was an octavo volume of 400 pages, and was the first book printed in America. The following is a specimen of the poetry.

PSALM 44.

Vr eares have heard our fathers tell  
& reverently record :  
The wondrous workes that thou hast done  
in olden time O Lord.

How thou didst cast the Gentiles out  
& stroid them with strong hand  
planting our fathers in their place  
& ganest to them their land.

They conquered not by sword nor strength the land  
of thy behest,  
But by thy hand, thy arm, thy grace  
because thou louedst them best.

Inhabitants. Samuel Aborne, farmer, resided at first on the Common, and then removed to Lynnfield, where his descendants remain. John Breed, died in 1678; the name of his wife was Sarah. Hugh Churchman died in 1644. William Clark, farmer, died 5 March 1683; his children were Hannah, John, Lydia, Sarah, Mary, and Elizabeth; his descendants remain. Thomas Clark removed to Reading. Wentworth Daniels. Thomas Gains. Zaccheus Gould, had a son Daniel. Samuel Hart lived in Hart street. Isaac Hart, removed to Reading.

The Lady Deborah Moody came to Lynn this year. In 1635, she went from one of the remote counties in England, to London, where she remained in opposition to a statute, which directed that no persons should reside beyond a limited time from their own homes. On the twenty first of April, the court

of the Star Chamber ordered, that " Dame Deborah Mowdie" and others " should return to their hereditaments in forty days, in the good example necessary for the poorer class." On the fifth of April 1640, soon after her arrival at Lynn, she united with the church of Salem. On the thirteenth of May, the court granted her 400 acres of land.<sup>1</sup> In 1641 she purchased Mr. Humfrey's farm," called Swamscut," for which she paid £1100.<sup>2</sup> Some time afterward she became imbued with the erroneous doctrine, that the baptism of infants was a sinful ordinance, and was excommunicated. In 1643, she removed to Long Island. Governor Winthrop says, " The Lady Moodye, a wise and anciently religious woman, being taken with the error of denying baptism to infants, was dealt withal by many of the elders and others, and admonished by the church of Salem, whereof she was a member, but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, &c. she removed to the Dutch, against the advice of all her friends." After her arrival at Long Island, she experienced much trouble from the Indians, her house being assaulted by them many times. Her wealth enabled her to render assistance to Governor Stuyvesant, in some trouble with the neighbouring settlers in 1654 ; and so great was her influence over him, that he conceded the nomination of the magistrates that year to her.<sup>3</sup> In Q. C. Rec. her son is styled *Sir Henry Moody*

---

## 1641.

Lord Say, having an intention of forming a plantation at New Providence, one of the Bahama Islands, had engaged Mr. Humfrey in the design, with the promise of making him governor of the new colony. Some of the Lynn people had determined to accompany him ; but the intention was frustrated, by the island falling, for a time, under the government of Spain.

Mr. John Humfrey was a native of Dorchester, in Dorsetshire, England, a lawyer, and a man of considerable wealth,

and good reputation. He married Susan, the second daughter of Thomas, Earl of Lincoln, and sister of Frances, the wife of Mr. John Gorges, and of Arbella, the wife of Mr. Isaac Johnson. He was one of the most influential in promoting the settlement of the colony, and the people of Massachusetts will ever regard him as one of their earliest and most efficient benefactors. He was one of the original patentees of the colony, and the treasurer of the company at Plymouth, in England; and by his exertions many donations were obtained, and many persons, among whom were some of the ministers, were induced to emigrate. He was chosen Deputy Governor in 1630, and Assistant in 1632, both before his arrival; and such was the respect in which he was held, that when the formulary for the constituting of freemen was in debate, an exception was made in favor of "the old planters" and "Mr. Humfrey." He arrived at Lynn in 1634, received several liberal grants from the court, and fixed his residence at Swampscot. In discharging the duties of an Assistant in the general government, he devoted his time and energies for seven years to the service of the state, and seems not to have been surpassed in devotedness to her welfare. He became a member of the Artillery Company in 1640; and in June 1641, was appointed to the command of all the militia in the county, with the title of Sergeant Major General. But with all his honors and possessions, a shade of dissatisfaction had spread itself over his prospects, which his numerous misfortunes contributed to darken. The disappointment of the Bahamas must have been severely felt, by a mind so ambitious of honor as his appears to have been; and it is not improbable that he experienced a secret chagrin at seeing the young and uninformed Henry Vane promoted to the office of governor, above one whose years, knowledge, and services, entitled him to precedence. It is probable likewise that his affection for his wife, whose hopes were in the land of her nativity, had some influence in determining his conduct. Living so far removed from the elegant circles in which she had delighted, and having lost the sister who might have been the companion of her solitude, the Lady Susan was weary of the privations of the wilderness, the howling of the wild beasts, and the uncouth manners of the savages, and had become lonely, disconsolate, and homesick. She who had been the delight of her father's house, and had glittered in all the pride of youth and beauty, in the court of the first monarch in Europe, was now solitary



and sad, separated by a wide ocean from her father's home. The future greatness of America, which was then uncertain and ideal, presented no inducement to her mind to counterbalance the losses which were first to be endured ; and the cold and barren wilderness of Saugus, populated by its few lonely cottages, round which the Indians were roaming by day, and the wolves making their nightly excursions, had nothing lovely to offer to sooth her sorrows or elevate her hopes. What the misfortunes and disappointments of Mr Humfrey had begun, her importunities completed. He sold the principal part of his farm to Lady Moody, and returned to England with his wife, on the twenty sixth of October. They were much censured for leaving their children, but their intention of visiting the Bahamas, and the approaching inclemency of the season, rendered it imprudent to take them, and they undoubtedly intended to return or send for them. That Mr Humfrey possessed deep sympathies, his letters sufficiently evince ; and it would be extremely uncharitable to suppose that the Lady Susan was without the endowments of maternal love. A woman of high feelings and keen sensibilities—the daughter of an English Earl—and according to Mr. Mather's own account, of “the best family of any nobleman then in England”—it cannot be supposed that she was destitute of those affections which form the characteristic charm of her sex. The emotions of the heart are not always regulated by rule, and disappointment sometimes makes sad havoc with the best feelings of our nature.

Tis thus with the dreams of the high heaving heart,  
They come but to blaze, and they blaze to depart ;  
Their gossamer wings are too thin to abide  
The chilling of sorrow, the burning of pride ;  
They come but to brush o'er its young gallant swell,  
Like bright birds over ocean, but never to dwell.<sup>1</sup>

They embarked from King's Beach, near Black Will's Cliff. The misfortunes which afterward befel some of the children, inflicted a wound on the heart of the affectionate father from which he never recovered. In a letter to Governor Winthrop, dated 4 September 1646, he says, “It is true the want of that lost occasion, the loss of all I had in the world, doth, upon rubbings of that irreparable blow, sometimes a little trouble me ; but in no respect equal to this, that I see my hopes and possibilities of ever enjoying those I did or was willing to suf-

---

1 J. Neal.

fer any thing for, utterly taken away. But by what intermediate hand soever this has befallen me, whose neglects and unkindness God I hope will mind them for their good, yet I desire to look at his hand for good I doubt not to me, though I do not so fully see which way it may work. Sir, I thank you, again and again, and that in sincerity, for any fruits of your goodness to me and mine; and for any thing contrary, I bless his name, I labor to forget, and desire him to pardon." Mr. Humfrey died in 1661, and in the same year, his administrators, Joseph Humfrey and Edmund Batter, claimed the 500 acres of land "by a pond of fresh water" in Lynnfield, which had been given him by the court. Mr. Robert Ingalls bought nine acres of the farm at Swampscot for 280 pounds, and Mr. Richard Johnson had 60 acres of the salt marsh for 30 pounds. The windmill on Sagamore Hill was valued at 60 pounds. The character of Mr. Humfrey has been drawn with conciseness by Governor Winthrop, who represents him to have been "a gentleman of special parts of learning and activity, and a godly man." His children were John, Joseph, Theophilus, Ann, Sarah, and Doreas. The first married William Palmer, of Ardfinan, Ireland, and afterward the Rev. John Miles of Swanzey. I have in my possession a deed signed by her, and sealed with the arms of the house of Lincoln.

In the early part of this year, says Governor Winthrop, "a goodly maid of the church of Linne, going in a deep snow from Meadford homeward, was lost, and some of her clothes found after among the rocks."

Several families in Lynn and Ipswich had made an agreement to remove to Long Island and form a new settlement; but the court disapproved, and persuaded them to relinquish their design.<sup>1</sup>

The following persons make their first appearance at Lynn this year.

Robert Bridges. He was admitted a freeman on the second of June. He had a large share in the iron works, and appears to have gone out to England on that account in 1643. He was captain of the militia, and a member of the artillery company. In 1644 he was chosen representative, and appointed a member of the Quarterly Court at Salem. In 1646 he was chosen Speaker of the House of Representatives, and the next year became an Assistant, in which office he continued till his death

---

<sup>1</sup> Winthrop.

in 1656. He is said by Mr. Johnson, to have been "endued with able parts, and forward to improve them to the glory of God and his people's good."

Daniel King was a merchant, and lived at Swampscot, where a beach still bears his name. He died 27 May 1672, aged 70. His sons were Daniel and Ralph.

Richard Moore died 1 January 1689. He had a son John. His descendants remain.

Edward Richards was "a Joiner," a freeman in 1641, and died 26 January 1690, aged 74. His descendants remain.

Other inhabitants were, Edmund Audley; William Cattlebury moved to Salem and there died. His widow Beatrice married Francis Plummer of Newbury; John Cole, who died 8 October 1703; George Davis, removed to Reading; Daniel Fairfield; Joseph Howe; William Hubbard; Abraham Otley; Adam Otley, who married a daughter of Mr. John Humfrey; Edward Paine; Hugh Stacey; John Stacey, whose descendants remain; and William Stark.

---

## 1642.

The winter was exceedingly cold, with deep snow, and the harbor was passable with teams for five weeks. The Indians said that the weather had not been so cold for forty years.

A great alarm was occasioned through the colony by a report that the Indians intended to exterminate the English. The people were ordered to keep a watch from sunset to sunrise, and blacksmiths were directed to suspend all other business till the arms of the colony were repaired. A house was built for the soldiers, and another, about forty feet long, for a safe retreat for the women and children of the town, in case of an attack from the Indians. These houses were within the limits of Saugus, about eighty rods from the eastern boundary, and about the same distance south of Walnut street. The cellars of both these buildings remain, and near them, on the east, is a fine unfailing spring.

The inhabitants whose names are first found this year, are the following. Andrew Allen. He removed to Andover. Hugh Cawkin, freeman 1642, removed to Gloucester, of which place he was representative in 1650. Thomas Ewington. Henry Jones. John Mansfield, tailor, freeman 1643, died in 1671, aged 52. Robert Mansfield. Thomas Mansfield. John Maddox came from Bristol, Eng. and died in Newbury, Mass. Thomas Putnam. Roger Scott. John Tillton. William Tillton. Daniel Trumbull. Nathaniel Tyler.

A general tax of eight hundred pounds was laid, of which Lynn paid forty five.

At the Salem Court, 12 July, "George Sagamore and Edward, alias Ned," prosecuted Francis Lightfoot for land. The case was referred to the Boston court.

Governor Dudley, in a letter to his son in England, dated 28 November, remarks, "There is a want of schoolmasters hereabouts."

At the Quarterly Court, 14 December, "The Lady Deborah Moodie, Mrs. King, and the wife of John Tillton," were presented, "for houldinge that the baptising of Infants is noe ordinance of God."

---

## 1643.

Much difficulty was occasioned for several years, by an erroneous opinion which some of the people entertained, that the baptism of infants was sinful. Mr. William Witter was presented at the Salem Court for his conduct in this respect, and on the twenty eighth of February the following record was made. "William Witter—Now comeing in, answered humbly, and confessed his Ignorance, and his willingness to see Light, and, (upon Mr. Norris our Elder his speech,) seemed to be staggered, Inasmuch as that he came in court meltinglie. Sentence—Have called our ordenonce of God, a badge of the [wicked woman] on some Lecture day, the next 5th day being a public fast. To acknowledge his falt, And to ask Mr. Cobbett forgiveness, in saying he spok against his conscience. And enjoined to be heare next court att Salem." At the same court, Roger Scott was presented, "for common sleeping at the publick exercise upon the Lord's day, and for striking him

that waked him." In December following, not having amended his conduct, he was sentenced by the court, "to be severely whipped." It was the custom at this time, during the public service, for a person to go about the meeting to wake the sleepers. He bore a long wand, on one end of which was a ball and on the other a fox tail. When he observed the men asleep, he rapped them on the head with the knob; and roused the slumbering sensibilities of the ladies by drawing the brush lightly across their faces.

On Sunday morning March 5, there was an earthquake.

A controversy was in agitation respecting the right of the assistants to a negative vote upon the resolves of the representatives. Mr. Cobbett wrote a treatise, in which he advocated the right of the assistants, and the question was finally decided in their favor.

On the fifth of June, says Governor Winthrop, "there arose a sudden gust at NW. so violent for half an hour as it blew down multitudes of trees. It lifted up their meeting house at Newbury, the people being in it. It darkened the air with dust, yet through God's great mercy it did no hurt, but only killed one Indian. It was straight between Linne and Hampton."

In June, Mr. Edward Tomlins was appointed by the court a commissioner to treat with the Indians. He was also appointed Clerk of the Writs, instead of Mr. Richard Sadler.<sup>1</sup>

An Iron Mine having been discovered on the land of Mr. Adam Hawkes, in Saugus, information was sent to England; where a company was formed, called the Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works. It consisted of the following gentlemen.

Lionel Copley, Esquire, of York County, England.

Nicholas Boad, Esquire, of Westminster.

Thomas Pury, Esquire, of Westminster.

John Beex, London, Merchant.

William Beauchamp, London, Merchant.

Thomas Foley, London, Gentleman.

William Greenhill, Stepney, Middlesex County.

Thomas Weld, Minister, Gateshead, Durham County.

John Pococke, Merchant Tailor, London.

William Becke, Merchant Tailor, London.

William Hicocke, London, Citizen.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. John Winthrop, junior, came from England with work-

---

1 Col. Rec.

2 Suffolk Reg. Deeds.

men, and stock to the amount of one thousand pounds, for commencing the work. A Foundry was erected on the western bank of Saugus river, upon land now owned by Mr. Thomas Mansfield, where large heaps of scoria are still to be seen. The iron ore was very plenty, about one mile north of the Foundry ; and according to several accounts, some lead was discovered, which the people at first imagined to be silver. The village at the Foundry was called Hammersmith, by some of the workmen who came from a place of that name in England.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Endercott, in a letter to Governor Winthrop, December 1, says, "I want much to hear from your son's Iron and Steel."<sup>2</sup> Mr. William Wood says that Iron was discovered as early as 1633.

At the Quarterly Court, December 27, Mr. Joseph Armitage was presented, "for procuring a warrant for seaventy persons to appeare forthwithe before the Governor, which we conceave may be of dangerous consequence." The court fined him ten pounds.

---

### 1644.

The Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works, on the seventh of March, laid before the court ten propositions for the advancement of their designs ; the most important of which were granted. They were allowed permission to make use of six places, three miles square in each place, wherever they might choose, without interfering with previous grants. Their privileges were to continue twenty one years ; with exemption of themselves, their workmen, and stock, from all public taxes, for ten years.<sup>3</sup>

On the twentieth of May, the court allowed the town "thirty sacre shot" for their two great guns, of which Captain Robert Bridges had the care. At the same court the name of Lynn Village was altered to Reading.<sup>3</sup>

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty seventh of August, the following persons were presented. "Wm. Hewes and John his son, for deriding such as Sing in the Congregation, tearming them fooles ; also William Hewes for saying Mr.

---

1 Essex Reg. Deeds.

2 Hazard's Col.

3 Col. Rec.

Whiting preaches confusedly; also John Hewes for charging Mr. Cobbitt with falshood in his doctrine. Wm. Hewes and John his son shall pay 50s. a peece for a fine, and yt it be Injoynd they shall make an humble confession at Lynn, at a publick meeting, wh according to it ye Court will consider of their fines."

The following persons appear at Lynn this year.

John Diven. He died 4 October 1634. He had a son John.

John Fuller came from England, with his brother Samuel, in 1630, and when they arrived at Boston "only seven huts were erected." After residing in that place for several years, Samuel went to Scituate, and John, in 1644, came to Lynn, and settled at the western end of Water Hill street. He was chosen Representative in 1655, and Clerk of the Writs in 1662. He died 29 June 1666. The name of his wife was Elizabeth, and he had five children.<sup>1</sup> Lieut. John, who was born in 1621, married Elizabeth Farrington, and died 29 April 1695. 2. William. 3. Susannah. 4. Elizabeth. 5. James. A number of his decendants have borne respectable offices, and several families of them remain.

Henry Roades was a farmer, and lived on the western side of Saugus river. He was born in 1608. He had two sons, Jonathan and Henry, and his descendants remain.

Other inhabitants were Henry Fitch, Richard Ireson, Robert Pinion, Nicholas Pinion, Richard Woodman and Thomas Purchis.

On the thirteenth of November, the Iron Company presented to the court seven more propositions; in reply to which, the court, in addition to their former grants, allowed them three years "for ye perfecting of their worke, and furnishing of ye country with all sorts of barr iron." They gave any of the inhabitants liberty to share in the work, by bringing in within one year, no less than 100£ a person, with allowance to ye adventurers &c. for 1000£ already disbursed;" if they would complete the finery and forge, as well as the furnace, which "is already set up." They gave them liberty, in all waste places, "to make use of all yron ston, or yron oare," to cut wood, and to make ponds and highways. They likewise granted them immunities, civil and religious, equal with any in the jurisdiction; and recommended them to provide religious instruction for the

families of their workmen, who were to be free from all trainings and watchings.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1645.

Among the inhabitants found at Lynn this year, are the following.

Arzbell Anderson. He came from Scotland, and was a workman at the Iron Foundry. He died in 1661.

Samuel Appleton was a descendant of John Appulton, who died at Great Waldingfield, England, in 1436. His father Samuel resided at Ipswich. His son Samuel married Elizabeth Whittingham of Boston, and had three children, Mary, Hannah, and Elizabeth.

Mac Callum More Downing came from Scotland, and was a workman in the Iron Foundry. He died in 1683.

Richard Haven, farmer, lived near the Flax Pond. His wife Susannah died 7 February, 1682. His children were, 1. Hannah, born 22 December, 1645. 2. Mary. 3. Joseph, who was one of the first settlers of Framingham. 4. Richard. 5. Susannah. 6. Sarah. 7. John. 8. Martha. 9. Samuel. 10. Jonathan. 11. Nathaniel. 12. Moses. A descendant of his, Rev. Samuel Haven D. D. was minister at Portsmouth.

Joseph Jenks came from Hammersmith, in England. He was a blacksmith, and worked at the Iron Foundry. He died in March, 1683. He had, beside two daughters, five sons. 1. Joseph, who removed to Pawtucket, where he built a forge which was destroyed in Philip's wars. In 1680 he was chosen an Assistant of Rhode Island colony. His son Joseph, in 1726, was elected Governor of Rhode Island. 2. George, or William, who went to Virginia. 3. Samuel. 4. John, born July 27, 1660, d. 1698. 5. Daniel, who went to Cumberland, in the State of Rhode Island. Mr. Jenks is frequently mentioned in the records of the court, as a very ingenious and useful man, and his descendants through out New England are numerous and respectable. Among them is the Rev. William Jenks, D. D. of Boston.

---



Richard Leader was agent for the company of Undertakers of the Iron works.

Henry Styche lived at the Iron works. He was alive in 1653, and was then 103 years of age.<sup>1</sup>

Other inhabitants were, Theophilus Bayley, farmer, who died 14 February 1694, Richard Bayley, William Bitnar, Tobias Haskell, Myhill Lambard, Quentin Pray, Richard Pray, and William Prichett.

The establishment of the Iron Foundry at Lynn was highly approved by the Court, who passed the following order on the fourteenth of May.

“Whereas it is now found by sufficient purpose y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> iron worke is very successful, (both in y<sup>e</sup> richness of y<sup>e</sup> ore and y<sup>e</sup> goodness of y<sup>e</sup> iron,) and like to be of great benefit to y<sup>e</sup> whole Country, especially if y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants here should be interested therein, in some good proportion, (one halfe at the least,) and whereas y<sup>e</sup> time limited for adventurers to come in wilbe expired in y<sup>e</sup> 9th mo. next: This Cort taking y<sup>e</sup> same into serious consideration, and being carefull y<sup>t</sup> such an opportunity, for so great advantage to y<sup>e</sup> Comon wealth might not be let slip: have taken order, y<sup>t</sup> speedy notice thereof should be given to every towne, within this iurisdiction expecting y<sup>t</sup> all such persons, as are of sufficient ability, and intend their owne benefit, with y<sup>e</sup> Comon good will forthwith appeare to com in to share in y<sup>e</sup> worke, according to theire abilities, and for their bettr instruction, and direction herein, they are hereby to understand that y<sup>r</sup> is already disbursed between 1200 £, and 1500 £, w<sup>th</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>e</sup> furnace is built, w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>t</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> belongeth to it, and good quantity of mine, Coale, and wood provided, and some tuns of sowe iron cast, and some other things, in readiness, for y<sup>e</sup> forge &c. they are also to know y<sup>t</sup> no adventurer is to put in lesse y<sup>n</sup> 100 £: but divers may ioyn together to make up y<sup>t</sup> sum: so it come all und<sup>r</sup> one name, y<sup>r</sup> wilbe neede of some 1500 £ to finish y<sup>e</sup> forge &c w<sup>ch</sup> wilbe accepted in mony, beaver, wheate, coales, or any such Comodities, as will satisfy y<sup>e</sup> Workmen, and these are to be paid in to Mr. Henry Webbe of Boston, by such direction as they may receive from y<sup>e</sup> undertakers, Mr. John Winthroe iuni: maior Sedgwick, Mr. Henry Webb aforesaid, and Mr. Joshua Hewes; the newe adventurers are also to know, y<sup>t</sup> they must beare their pt, in

---

1 Q. C. Files.

such losse, as is befallen y<sup>e</sup> first stock, by forbearance, or otherwise, to y<sup>e</sup> time of y<sup>e</sup> newe adventurers paying in their adventures, and all such, as will adventure are desired to hasten their resolutions y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> worke may go on speedily."<sup>1</sup>

A question has arisen, whether the first forge might not have been established at Braintree. It certainly was not. The first purchase of land for the iron works at Braintree, which has been discovered, was not till some months after this time, namely, on the twenty ninth of September 1645, when George Ruggles sold Richard Leader twenty acres.<sup>2</sup> The grant of "2860 acres," made for the iron works "to be set up" at Braintree, was not laid out till the eleventh of January 1648.<sup>3</sup> It is certain that an Iron Foundry was in successful operation at Lynn as early as 1645, and as mention is only made by the court of one forge, it follows of course that it must have been this. In 1691, iron ore, called "Rock mine," was taken from the ledges at Nahant for the forge at Braintree.

The court ordered, that youth, from ten to sixteen years of age, should be exercised, on training days, in the use of small guns, half pikes, and bows and arrows. They also ordered, that any person who should make or publish a false report, should be fined ten shillings, or set in the stocks.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Edward Burcham was chosen "Clarke of the Writts, and to record deaths, births, and marriages for y<sup>e</sup> Towne."<sup>1</sup>

"Thomas Layton hath Liberty graited him by the house of deputies, to drawe wine for y<sup>e</sup> town for one year."<sup>1</sup>

"Thomas Layghton, Edw. Burcham, and Thoms. Puttnam are chosen by y<sup>e</sup> house of depts to end small controversies."<sup>1</sup>

The number of inhabitants having been considerably diminished by the removal of so many families to Reading, Long Island, and other places, a petition was presented to the court for an abatement of taxes. The original paper, very much torn and trampled by the mob, which dilapidated Governor Hutchinson's house and papers in 1765, is still in existence. It commences with "humbly shewing, that whereas the overruling Providence of God hath much weakened our hands, (which yet were never of like strength with others about us,) to bear such a share in the Publique disbursements and debts of the country as formerly, we therefore make hold truly to Informe this honoured Court of our Infeebled estate with which we have more Immediate cause to be best acquainted. Those

---

1 Col. Rec.      2 Suff. Reg. Deeds.      3 Bost. Rec.

fewe able persons which were with and of us, Its not unknown how many of them have deserted us; as my lady Moody, whose share, in a former rate of this towne, at 80<sup>o</sup> was above 4 £. and her estate, left now in a life rate, pays not 1 £. 10 s. Mr. Howel 6 £. Mr. Willis 5 £. Mr. Keyne 2 £. Mr. Edward Tomlins neare 3 £. John Poole 1 £ 15s. Mr. Stoller 1 £. 10 s. Nic Browne as much. Lieutenant Walker 1 £. Wm. Halsey 1 £. John Cowper 1 £. Mr. Wade 12 s. James Hubbard 12 s. Wm. Cowdrey, Wm. Blott, Wm. Martin, Thomas Marshall, Zachary fitch, 10 s. each of them, besides above 20 more whose share in such a rate was, some 8, some 7," &c. The petitioners state, that between "two and three hundred acres" of the deserted farms "is soe overrun with Sorrel that it is scarce quitinge cost to such whose necessities is such as with us force them to improve the same. We would not envy our neighbor townes, which are of the risinge hand by tradinge or otherwayes, we rather wish their prosperity, but for ourselves, we are neither fitted for or inured to any such course of trade, but must awayte God's blessinge alone upon our Lands and Cattel; our Earnest Request therefore is, that this honoured Court, in which is the Confluence of the wisdom, fidelity, and Equity of the Country, would please seriously to weigh the premises touching our present estate, and proportion out such share of Publique Charges, according not to our supposed but real Abilities which the Lord hath left us, and we shall cheerfully put too our shoulders and continue our joynt prayers for you and yours. Resting yours to serve and obey in the Lord."<sup>1</sup> This petition was signed by Thomas Putnam, Francis Lightfoot, Henry Collins, William Longley, and Thomas Lighton, "of ye 7 men in ye name of ye whole." The court, in their reply say, "We conceive the estate of lin should be considered;" and when they laid the tax, which was £616,15, they required only £25 from Lynn.

Some of the inhabitants of Lynn and Salem petitioned the court for liberty to form an independent company. The court gave permission, and a band was formed, called "ye Military Company of Lynn and Salem."<sup>1</sup>

At the Quarterly Court, on the fifth of July, Samuel Bennet was presented, "for saying, in a scornful manner, he neither cared for the Towne, nor any order the Towne could make."<sup>2</sup>

Captain Robert Bridges was appointed by the court, a commissioner to negotiate between Lord De La Tour and Mea-

sieur D'Aulney, the governors of the French provinces on the north of New England. He was accompanied by Richard Walker and Thomas Marshall. For their "good service" in this embassy, Captain Bridges was allowed ten pounds, Lieutenant Walker four pounds, and Sergeant Marshall forty shillings.<sup>1</sup>

On the fourteenth of October, the Company of Undertakers for the Iron Works presented a petition to the court, which was granted. As the answer of the court comprises some interesting information respecting the Iron Works, it is transcribed.

"1. It was graunted and by this Courte ordered, That the undertakers, their agents and assigns, are hereby granted the sole privileged and benefitt of making Iron and managing of all Iron mines and workes that now are, or shall be discovered and found out, or hereafter shall be in this Jurisdiction, for the terme of twenty one yeares from the former graunt: Provided that the said adventurers, their agents or assignes, doe within three yeares from the former date, use their best endeavours to their utmost skill to perfect so many of the said workes, that the Inhabitants of this Jurisdiction be furnished with barr Iron of all sorts for their use, not exceeding twenty pounds p tunne. Provided also, that it shall be in the liberty of any within this Jurisdiction to be adventurers with the undertakers, y<sup>t</sup> by the last day of this October they bring in their adventures, not lesse in one mans name than fifty pounds, wth allowance to y<sup>e</sup> adventurers, for the stocke of one thousand pounds, by them already disbursed.

2. The Courte doth hereby further graunt to the said undertakers, their agents and assignes, in all places of waste and lands not impropriated to any towne or person, that the said undertakers, their agents or assignes, at all times during the said terme of twenty one yecres, shall and may freely and at their own discretion have and take, all manner of wood and timber, to be converted into coales, or any other uses for the service of the undertakers, as also all manner of earth, stones, turfe, clay and other materialls for buildings and reparation of their workes, forges, mills, or houses built, or to be built, or for making or moulding any manner of gunnes, potts, and all other cast Iron ware, and for converting wood into charke coale, and also to gett digg and carry away of all manner of stone Iron oare and wood of all soarts; and any other materiall, or thinge of use

for their workes, and it is hereby also graunted to the said undertakers, their agents, or assignes, that they shall have free liberty to make all convenient wayes and passages, as also all manner of dammes watercourses, sluces ponds for water, in all waste grounds, or other conveneyes, to, from and for the service of the said workes built or to be built not impropriated to any towne or person, during such time as the said workes shall continue, Provided, if by any pond sluice damme or any other worke (though in land impropriated) they should spoile, or any wayes prejudice the land appropriated to any towne or person the said undertakers shall make due and just satisfaction.

3. Also the Courte doth hereby further graunt to y<sup>e</sup> said adventurers, their agents, or assignes, in all the grounds that are or shall be appropriated, that the said adventurers their agents or assigns shall have free liberty at all times during the terme to digg gett carry away all manner of stone, or Iron oare and to make and use all convenient wayes and sluces watercourses pooles, dammes, ponds for water and other conveniences, to, from, and for the service of the said workes through all the said grounds, that are or hereafter shall be impropriated (except howses orchards not exceeding three ackers and yards) giving such due and full recompense for the same to the owners thereof, for the time being, as three indifferent men shall adiudge, whereof one to be appointed by the said courte at the next generall meeting after the undertakers, their agents or assignes, shall make or use any of the said wayes, or watercourses, or other particulars therein mentioned for the services aforesaid, and one other by the owner of the land for the time being, and the third by the undertakers or adventurers.

4. The Courte hereby doe further graunt unto the said adventurers and to their heires and assignes forever, so much land now or hereafter to be in this Jurisdiction, as aforesaid, as shall containe in sixe places three miles square in each place, or so much in quantity as containeth three miles square not exceeding fower miles in length to be sett out in such places and parcells, as the said undertakers or their agents shall make choyce of, not being already impropriated as aforesaid, upon wch said land the said adventures shall have free liberty and hereby doe undertake that within the said term of [twenty one] yeeres, to search sett out and find convenient places within the said compass of land; for the building and setting up of sixe forges, or furnaces and not bloomyes only, or so many more

as they shall have occasion for, for the making of Iron as aforesaid, wch they shall (the Iron stone and other materialls appearing proper and fitt for the making of Iron as aforesaid) build and sett up within the terme aforesaid Provided that y<sup>e</sup> Courte may graunt a plantacon in any place where the courte doth thinke meete, the undertakers or their agents their residing having first notice thereof, and not making choyce of the same for pte of the land to be sett out and graunted to them, for the design of planting the said Iron workes and making Iron as aforesaid.

5. And it is further granted and ordered that what quantity of Iron of all sorts and quallities the said adventurers their agents, or assignes shall make more then the Inhabitants shall have need or use of for their service to be bought and paid for by the said Inhabitants as aforesaid they shall have free liberty to transport the same by shipping to other pts or places of the world and to make sale thereof, in what way and place the said adventurers shall please for their best advantage, Provided they sell it not to any person or state in actuall hostility with us.

6. It is further graunted and ordered that the said undertakers and agents, and servants, shall from the date of their presents have and enjoy all libertyes and immunities whatsoever, present or to come, equal with any in this jurisdiccon, according to the lawes and orders thereof, for the time being, and according to the rights and priviledges of the churches.

7. It is also graunted that the undertakers and adventurers, together with their agents, servants, and assignes, shall be and are hereby free from all taxes, assessments, contributions, and other publicke chardges whatsoever, for soe much of their stocke or goods as shall be employed in and about the said Iron workes for and during the terme of [twenty one] yeeres yet to come from the date of their presents.

8. It is also hereby further graunted and ordered that all such clarkes and workmen as myners, founders, fyners hammer men, and collyers necessarily imployed, or to be imployd in and about the said workes, built or to be built, for any the services thereof, shall from time to time during the terme of [twenty one] yeeres, be and hereby are absolutely freed and discharged of and from all ordinary trainings, watchings, etc. but that evy person at all times be furnished with armes, poud<sup>r</sup> shott, etc. according to order of courte.

9. Lastly, It is ordered by y<sup>e</sup> Courte, that in all places

where any Iron worke is sett up, remote from a church or congregation, unto wch they cannot conveniently come, that the undertakers shall provide some good meanes whereby their families my be instructed in the knowledge of God, by such as the courte or standing Councell shall approve of."<sup>1</sup>

On the twenty second of December, "Thomas Hudson of Linne, granted unto Thos. Hutchinson of Linne, sixty acres of ground amongst the furnaces, adjoyning to Goodman Townsend's ferme."<sup>2</sup>

## 1646.

The proprietors of the Iron Works, in the beginning of this year, made an agreement with Thomas Dexter, for opening a new watercourse, and enlarging the pond. They purchased "all that parcell of land neere adjacent to the Grantor's house, which shall necessarily be overflowed by reason of a pond of water, there included, to be stopped to the heighth agreed on betwixt them; and sufficient for a watercourse intended to be erected, together with the land lying betweene the ould watercourse and the new one, And also five acres and halfe in the cornfield next the Grantor's house," for which they allowed £40. They agreed to make a fence "toward Capt. Bridge's house," with "a sufficient cart bridge over the said watercourse," and "to allow sufficient water in the ould river for the Alewives to come to the wyres before the Grantor's house."<sup>2</sup> This extension of the pond caused it to overflow three acres of land belonging to Mr. Adam Hawkes.<sup>3</sup> The whole amount purchased was forty five acres.

On the eighteenth of February, Mr. William Witter was presented at the Quarterly Court, "for saying that they who stayed while a Childe is baptised, doe worshipp the dyvill; also Henry Collense and Martha West, deling with him about the former speeche, speak to them after this manner, That they who stayed at the baptising of a Childe, did take the name of the Father, Sonn, and holly ghost in vain and broke the Saboth, (and confesseth and justifieth his former speech.) Sentence of Court is, an Injunction next Lord's day being faire, that he make a publike confession to Satisfaction, in the open congregation at Lyn, or else to answer it at the next General

1. Col. Rec.

2. Suf. Reg. Deeds

3 Q. C. Files.

Court. And concerning his opinion, the court hath yet patience toward him, till they see if he be obstinate, and only admonish him."<sup>1</sup>

On the sixth of May, Mr. John Lewis was admitted a free-man.

By permission of the court, Mr. Leader purchased "some of the country's Gunnes," to melt over at the Iron Foundry.<sup>2</sup>

On the tenth of June, Mr. Joseph Jenks presented a petition that the Court would patronise his improvements in mills, and the manufacture of sythes. "In Ansr to a peticon of Joseph Jencks for liberty to make experience of his abillities and Inventions for ye making of engines for mills, to goe with water, for the more speedy despatch of worke than formerly, and mills for the making of sithes and other edge tooles, with a new Invented sawemill, that things may be afforded cheaper than formerly, and that for fourteen yeeres without disturbance by any other's setting up the like Invention, that so his study and costs may not be in vayne or lost, this peticon was graunted, so as power is still left to restrayne the exportation of such manufactures, and to moderate the prizes thereof, if occaon so require."<sup>3</sup>

Mr. Daniel King complained to the Court that his goods had been taken, to the amount of fifty shillings, by "the captain of ye trayned band of Lin, for supposed neglect of trayning, he being lame, and willing to find a sufficient man." The court ordered him to pay the fifty shillings for the past, and ten shillings annually for the future.<sup>3</sup>

Much damage was done to the corn, wheat, and barley, this summer, by a species of large black caterpillar.<sup>4</sup>

On the fourth of August, Mr. Thomas Dexter was presented at the Quarterly Court "for a common sleeper," in meetings for public worship, and fined.<sup>1</sup>

The proprietors of the Iron Works addressed a letter to the court in May, which was answered in September. In their reply, the court say, "We acknowledge with you that such a staple comodity as Iron is a great meanes to enrich ye place where it is, both by furnishing this place with yt comodity at reasonable rates, and by bringing in other necessary comodities in exchange of Iron exported, but as we use to say, if a man lives where an axe is worth but 12 d. yet it is never the cheaper to him who cannot get 12 d. to buy one. So if your Iron may not be had heere without ready mony what advantage will that

---

1 Q. C. Files.    2 Col. Rec.    3 Col. Files.    4 Winthrop.



be to us if wee have no money to purchase it. It is true some men have here Spanish mony sometimes, but little comes to our Smiths hands especially those of inland townes. What monyes our Smithes can gett you may be sure to have it before any other; if we must want Iron so often as our mony failes you may easily Judge if it were not better for us to Procure it from other places (by our corne and pipe staves &c) then to depend on y<sup>e</sup> comming in of mony wch is never so plentifull as to supply for y<sup>e</sup> occacon."<sup>1</sup>

In October, Captain Robert Bridges was chosen Speaker of the House of Representatives.<sup>1</sup>

On the twenty sixth of October, a petition was presented to the court, that Jane Armitage might be permitted "to keep an Ordinary," which was granted. It was signed by Mr. Whiting, Mr. Cobbet, and thirty two others. This tavern was opened on the north side of the Common, opposite the Academy, and was called "The Anchor." It was kept in the name of the wife, because Mr. Armitage was involved in pecuniary difficulties.<sup>1</sup>

On the night of the fourth of November, began "a most dreadful tempest at northeast, with wind and rain." The roof of Lady Moody's house at Salem was blown off.<sup>2</sup>

At the court, in this month, "on the motion of the deputies of the towne of Linne; It is ordered that there shal be once a weeke a market kept there on every third day of the weeke, being their lecture day."<sup>1</sup>

## 1647.

On the twentieth of January, Richard Leader sold to Joseph Jenks, the privilege to build a forge at the Iron Works, for the manufacture of sythes.<sup>1</sup>

On the twenty sixth of May, Captain Robert Bridges was chosen an Assistant.<sup>1</sup>

In June, an epidemic sickness prevailed through the whole country, supposed to have been the influenza.<sup>2</sup>

The names of persons first found at Lynn this year, are the following. Richard, John, and Robert Blood; the last two of whom removed to Concord. Matthew Boomer. John Dia-

1. Col. Rec.

2 Winthrop.

mond, ancestor of the celebrated Mary Pitcher. William Edwards, died 1693. John Hardman. Benjamin Hearndale. William Hacker, Edmund Needham, died 16 May, 1677. Jonah Needham, died 24 October 1674, aged 64 years. Thomas Pigden. Charles Phillips. Henry Reinolds. John Turner. The last four were workmen at the Iron Foundry.

In October, the court ordered, that every town containing fifty families, should have a school for reading and writing; and that all towns containing one hundred families, should maintain a grammar school.<sup>1</sup>

An order was passed, that if any young man should address a young woman, without the consent of her parents, or, in their absence, of the county court, he should be fined five pounds.<sup>1</sup>

The court fixed the prices of grain to be received for taxes; Indian corn at 3s. rye and peas at 3s. 6d. barley at 4s. and wheat at 4s. 6d. a bushel.<sup>1</sup>

Among the presentments at the Quarterly court, was the following. December 14. "The town of Lynn, for want of a staff for the constable."<sup>3</sup>

December 29. "John Turner, living at the Iron Workes at Lin, being convicted before the court for stabbing Sara Turner, his daughter in law—the sentence of court is, that he shall be severely whipped."<sup>3</sup>

---

## 1648.

On the twenty third of March, the court allowed the town twenty pounds, toward repairing the "great bridge" over Saugus river. On the eighteenth of October, thirty shillings were granted annually for the same purpose.<sup>1</sup>

On the twenty-seventh of April, Captain Robert Bridge's house, near the Iron Works, was burnt.<sup>2</sup>

In June, Margaret Jones, of Charlestown, was executed at Boston, for a witch. This was the first execution for this offence in New England, and should have been the last.

In a letter to his son, dated August 4, Mr. Winthrop remarks; "The iron work goeth on with more hope. It yields now about 7 tons per week, but it is most out of that brown earth which lies under the bog mine. They tried another

---

1 Col. Rec.

2. Winthrop.

3. Q. C. Files, and Rec.

mine, and after 24 hours they had a sum of about 500, which when they brake, they conceived to be a 5th part silver. There is a grave man of good fashion come now over to see how things stand here. He is one who hath been exercised in iron works." In another letter, September 30, he says, "The furnace runs 8 tons per week, and their bar iron is as good as Spanish. The adventurers in England sent over one Mr Dawes to oversee Mr Leader, but he is far short of Mr Leader. They could not agree, so he is returned by Teneriffe."

---

## 1649.

The Rev Thomas Cobbet preached the Election sermon before the court, on the third of May.

On the tenth, the Governor and Assistants, among whom was Captain Robert Bridges, signed a protestation against the prevailing custom of wearing long hair, "after the manner of ruffians and barbarous Indians."<sup>1</sup>

On the seventh of September, Nicholas Pinion was presented at the Quarterly court, for swearing. "The deposition of Quinten Pray. This deponent saith y<sup>t</sup> meetinge w<sup>h</sup> Nich<sup>s</sup> Pinion y<sup>e</sup> last Lord's day, cominge out of his corne, hee heard y<sup>e</sup> said Pinion sware—all his pumpkins were turned to squashes." The court, as a comment upon Mr Johnson's text, "let no man make a jest at pumpkins," fined him.<sup>2</sup>

On the eleventh, Matthew Stanley was tried for winning the affections of John Tarbox's daughter, without the consent of her parents. He was fined £5, with 2s. 6d. fees. The parents of the young woman were allowed six shillings for their attendance three days.<sup>3</sup>

---

## 1650.

The following persons appear to have been inhabitants of Lynn as early as this year.

Hugh Alley, farmer, lived in Market street. He had a son Hugh. His descendants remain, and are numerous.

John Alley, farmer, had two sons, John and Hugh.

---

1 Hutchinson.

2 Q. C. Rec. and Files. See page 88.

Robert Howard, had a son Edward, and his descendants remain.

Richard Hood came from Lynn, in England. He died 12 September, 1695. His sons were Joseph and Benjamin, and his descendants remain.

John Hood was a brother of Richard.

Joseph Holloway died 29 November, 1693. He had a son Joseph, and his descendants remain.

Henry Leonard was a workman at the Iron Foundry. The family of the Leonards have been extensively engaged in the manufacture of iron, in various places, for many generations.

Robert Rand, farmer, Fayette street. His children were Robert, Zachary, Elizabeth, and Mary, and his descendants remain.

Captain Shubael Walker, was buried 24 January, 1689.

John Witt died in December, 1675. His children were Ann, Elizabeth, Sarah, Mary, Martha, John, and Thomas. His descendants remain.

Jonathan Witt died in 1665.

Thomas Wellman died in 1672. His children were Abigail, Isaac, Elizabeth, Sarah, and Mary.

Other inhabitants of Lynn, between 1650 and 1675, were the following. John Andrews. John Atwell, whose descendants remain. Thomas Brewer. William Barber. Thomas Berry, whose descendants remain. Robert Bates. Thomas Burrage. Benjamin Brisco, shoemaker. William Croft. George Darling. William Dyer. Allister Douglas. Joseph Fisk. Joseph Hichin, whose descendants remain, and spell their name Hitchings. Samuel Hunt. John Lovell. Thomas Norwood. John Paule. Samuel Penfield, who married Mary Lewis, November, 1675. John Gingle. Ebenezzer Stocker, whose descendants remain. John Vinten. Simon Younglove. From 1675 the records are entire, and it is hoped that the guardians of our public property will be careful to preserve them.

---

## 1651.

Mr. Richard Leader, the agent for the Iron Works, was arraigned by the court, on the seventh of May, for reproaching Governor Endecott, the court, and the church at Lynn. In their first excitement, the court fined him two hundred pounds,

which were afterward reduced to fifty. Mr. Leader made an acknowledgment, and the fine was finally remitted.<sup>1</sup> After this, Mr. John Gifford appears as agent. He married the widow Margaret Temple, and had a son Philip.

On taking the management of the Iron Works, Mr. Gifford raised the dam, which caused the water to overflow six acres of "plowland" belonging to Mr. Adam Hawkes. For this, on the twentieth of June, an agreement was made, in which Mr. Hawkes was allowed £8 for damages.<sup>2</sup>

On Sunday, the twentieth of July, three men of the Baptist persuasion, whose names were John Clarke, John Crandall, and Obadiah Holmes, came from Newport, and went to the house of William Witter, at Swampscot, where Mr. Clarke began to preach. On hearing this, Captain Bridges, the magistrate, sent two constables to apprehend them, as disturbers of the peace. In the afternoon they were taken to Mr. Whiting's meeting, where they refused to uncover their heads. Mr. Bridges ordered a constable to take off their hats, when one of them attempted to speak, but was prevented. At the close of the meeting, one of them made some remarks, after which they were taken to the Anchor tavern, and guarded through the night. In the morning, they were sent to Boston, and imprisoned. On the thirty first, the court of Assistants sentenced Mr. Holmes to pay a fine of thirty pounds, Mr. Clark of twenty, and Mr. Crandall of five. The fines of Clark and Crandall were paid; but Mr. Holmes refused to pay his, or suffer it to be paid, and was retained in prison till September, when he was dismissed with thirty stripes. While in prison Mr. Clark consented to a proposal to dispute with the ministers; and after his liberation, published a small book, entitled "Ill news from New England;" to which Mr. Cobbet wrote an answer.<sup>3</sup>

On the fourteenth of October, the court made an order against "the intolerable excess and bravery" of dress. They ordered that no person whose estate did not exceed £200 should wear any great boots, gold or silver lace or buttons, or silk hoods, ribbons or scarfs, under a penalty of ten shillings.<sup>1</sup>

"In answer to a petition of George Indian at Lynn, This Court refers him to bring his action in some inferiour court, against any that ungenerously withhold any land from him."<sup>2</sup>

---

1 Col. Rec.      2 Q. C. Files,      3 Col. Rec. Allen, Benedict, Savage.

The following description of Lynn is from a work published by Mr. Edward Johnson.

"Her scituation is neere to a River whose strong freshet at breaking up of Winter filleth all her Bankes, and with a furious Torrent ventes itself into the Sea. This Towne is furnished with Mineralls of divers kinds especially Iron and Lead, the forme of it is almost square, onely it takes two large a run into the Land-ward (as most Townes do,) it is filled with about one Hundred Houses for dwelling. There is also an Iron Mill in constant use, but as for Lead they have tried but little yet. Their meeting house being on a Levell Land undefended from the cold North west wind; and therefore made with steps descending into the Earth, their streets are strait and comly yet but thin of Houses, the people mostly inclining to Husbandry have built many Farmes Remote. There Cattell exceedingly multiplied. Goates which were in great esteeme at their first comming, are now atmost quite banished, and now Horse, kine and Sheep are most in request with them."

In his remarks on manufactures, Mr. Johnson says, "All other trades have fallen into their ranks and places, to their great advantage, especially Coopers and Shoemakers, who had either of them a corporation granted, enriching themselves by their trades very much. As for Tanners and Shoemakers it being naturalized into their occupations to have a higher reach in managing these manufactures then other men in New England are, having not changed their nature in this, between them both they have kept men to their stande hitherto, almost doubling the price of their commodities, according to the rate they were sold for in England, and yet the plenty of Leather is beyond what they had there, counting the number of the people, but the transportation of Boots and Shoes into forraign parts hath vented all however."<sup>1</sup>

The manufacture of shoes had not, at this time, become a principal business at Lynn. A few persons practised the employment regularly; but they traded with merchants at Boston, and did not export for themselves. The shoes which they made were principally of calf skin, for Morocco had not been introduced. Cloth was worn only by the most wealthy; and if a lady in the more common ranks of life obtained a pair of stuff shoes, to grace the nuptial ceremony, they were afterward laid aside, and carefully preserved through life, as something too delicate for ordinary use.

## 1652.

Winnepurkitt, the Lynn Sagamore, on the first of April, mortgaged "all that Track or Neek of Land commonly called Nahant," to Nicholas Davison of Charlestown, "for twenty pounds sterling dew many yeer." The deed was signed with his mark, which has somewhat the form of a capital *H* in writing.<sup>1</sup>

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty ninth of June, the following presentments were made. "We present Ester, the wife of Joseph Jynkes Junior ffor wearing silver lace;" and "Robert Burges for bad corne grinding." Other persons were presented for wearing great boots and silk hoods.<sup>2</sup>

Mr. Gifford this year increased the height of the dam at the Iron Works, by which ten acres of Mr. Hawkes's land were flowed; for which he agreed to give 16 loads of hay yearly, and 200 cords of wood. Afterward he agreed to give him £7, "which ends all, except that 10s. is to be given him yearly." By this agreement the water was to be so kept "that it may not ascend the top of the upper floodgates in the pond, or pier then within foot and a halfe of the top of the great Rock that lies in the middle of the pond before the gates."<sup>2</sup>

On the twenty seventh of November, William Witter was presented for neglecting the public ordinances, and being re-baptized.<sup>2</sup>

This year a mint was established at Boston for coining silver. The pieces had the word Massachusetts, with a pine tree on one side; and the letters N. E. 1652, and III. VI. or XII. denoting the number of pence, on the other. It is said that the dies for coinage were made by Joseph Jenks, at the Iron Works.

## 1653.

On the seventh of March, the boundary line between Lynn and Reading was established.<sup>3</sup>

This year, Mr. Thomas Savage, of Boston, attached the Iron Works at Lynn, for the amount owed to him and Henry

---

1 Suf Reg. Deeds.

2 Q. C. Files.

3 Reading Rec.

Webb. On the fourteenth of September a special court convened at Boston, for the trial. Mr. Savage obtained for himself £894 2s. and for Henry Webb £1351 6s. 9d. The total account of Mr. John Gifford, agent for the company, was £16,284 7s. 4d.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1654.

The selectmen of Boston agreed with Mr. Joseph Jenks "for an Inigne to carry water in case of fire."<sup>2</sup> This is said to have been the first Fire Engine made in America.

In August, the court fixed the prices of grain; Indian corn at 3s. rye and peas at 4s. and wheat and barley at 5s. a bushel.<sup>1</sup>

At a town meeting, on the twenty eighth of December, a grant was made to Mr. Edmund Farrington, allowing him the privilege to build a grist mill, in Water Hill street, on condition that grain should be seasonably and faithfully ground; otherwise the privilege was to revert to the town.<sup>3</sup>

---

## 1655.

On the twenty third of May, the court granted to Mr. Joseph Jenks, a patent for an improved sythe, "for the more speedy cutting of grasse, for seven years."<sup>1</sup>

This year an epidemic prevailed through New England.

On the twenty seventh of November, Mr. William Longley was appointed Clerk of the Writs.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1656.

This year the Rev. Thomas Cobbet relinquished his connexion with the church at Lynn, and removed to Ipswich. He was born at Newbury, in England, in 1608. Though his father was poor, he found means to gain admission at the University of Oxford, which he left during the great sickness in 1625, and became a pupil of Dr. Twiss, in his native town.

---



He was afterward a minister of the established Church. He came to Lynn in 1637, and was welcomed by Mr. Whiting, with whom he had commenced a friendship in England. Mr. Mather says, "they were almost every day together, and thought it a long day if they were not so; the one rarely travelling abroad without the other." Mr. Cobbet preached at Lynn 19 years, and 29 at Ipswich. In 1666, he preached the election sermon, from II. Chronicles, 15 chapter, 2 verse. He died on Thursday, 5 November, 1685, and was buried on the next Monday. At his funeral were expended, one barrel of wine, £6,8; two barrels of cider, 11s. 82 pounds of sugar, £2,1; half a cord of wood, 4s. four dozen pair of gloves, "for men and women," £5,4; with "some spice and ginger for the cider." It was the custom at funerals to treat all the company with cider, which in cold weather was heated and spiced. In the year 1711, the town of Lynn paid for "half a barrel of cider for the widow Dispaw's funeral." Wine was distributed when it could be afforded. Gloves were commonly given to the bearers and principal mourners, and by the more wealthy, rings were sometimes added. Mr. Cobbet appears to have been much esteemed. The following epitaph to his memory is the best of Mr. Mather's productions.

Sta viator ; thesaurus hic jacet ;  
 THOMAS COBBETUS ;  
 Cujus,  
 Nosti preces potentissimas, ac mores probatissimos,  
 Si es Nov-Anglus,  
 Mirare, si pietatem colas ;  
 Sequere, si felicitatem optes.

The sense of which is preserved in the following translation.

Stop traveller, a treasure's buried here ;  
 Here Cobbet lies whose merits claim a tear.  
 His prayers were powerful, his manners pure,  
 As thou, if of New England's sons, art sure.  
 If thou reverest piety, admire ;  
 And imitate, if joy be thy desire.

Mr. Cobbet possessed good learning and abilities, and wrote more books than most of the early ministers of New England. Among his works were the following.

1. A treatise asserting the right of the Magistrates to a negative vote on the resolves of the Representatives. 1643.

2. A defence of Infant Baptism. 1645. This is said to have been an admirable summary of the principal arguments for and against the subject, and an able exposition of the error of those who deny the validity of this important rite.

3. The Civil Magistrate's power in matters of religion, modestly debated, &c. with a brief answer to a certain slanderous pamphlet, called "Ill News from New England." 1653. The "slanderous pamphlet" to which he refers, was the one written by Mr. John Clarke, the Baptist, in 1652.

4. A discourse on Prayer. Mr. Mather remarks that, "of all the books written by Mr. Cobbet, none deserves more to be read by the world, or to live till the general burning of the world, than that of Prayer."

5. "A fruitful and useful discourse, touching the honor due from Children to their Parents, and the duty of Parents toward their Children." London, 1656, 243 pages, octavo.

6. A treatise on ecclesiastical order and discipline.

7. Sermons.

The following beautiful picture of the enduring affection of a mother, is from the discourse on the duties of children.

"Despise not thy mother when she is old. When she was young, yea, when she was middle aged, thou prizedst, and respectedst, and didst reverence and obey her; do it as well when she is old; hold on doing of it to the last. Age may wear and waste a mother's beauty, strength, parts, limbs, senses, and estate; but her relation of a mother is as the sun when he goeth forth in his might, for the ever of this life, that is, always in its meridian, and knoweth no evening. The person may be gray headed, but her motherly relation is ever in its flourish. It may be autumn, yea winter, with the woman; but with the mother, as a mother, it is always spring."

In descanting on the duties of children, he says; "How tender were your parents of their dealings with men, to discharge a good conscience therein; of their very outward garb, what they ware, and of what fashion, and the like; but you their children regard not what you do, nor how you deal with others, nor what you wear, nor of what fashion, so the newest. Did ever your good father or grandfather wear such ruffianly hair upon their heads? or did your godly parents frisk from one new fangled fashion to another, as you do?"

The following anecdote is related by Mr. Mather. "The

ungrateful inhabitants of Lynn one year passed a town vote, that they could not allow their ministers above thirty pounds apiece that year, for their salary; and behold, the God who will not be mocked, immediately caused the town to lose three hundred pounds in that one specie of their cattle, by one disaster."

In a long and very interesting letter, written to Increase Mather in 1677, and which is yet unpublished,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Cobbet relates the following incident. "About the year 1628: when those few yt<sup>2</sup> came over with Collonel Indicot and begun to settle at Nahumkeeck, now called Salem, and in a manner all so sick of thejr journey, that though they had both small and great guns, and powder and bullets for ym, yet had not strength to mannage ym, if suddenly put upon it; and tidings being certainly brought ym on a lord's day morning yt a thousand Indians from Saugust, (now called Lyn,) were coming against ym to cut ym off, they had much adoe Amongst ym all to charge 2 or three of theyre great guns and traile ym to a place of advantage, where the Indians must pass to ym, and there to shoot ym off; when they heard by theyre noise which they made in the woods, yt the Indians drew neare, ye noise of which great Artillery, to which the Indians were never wonted before, did occasionally, (by the good hand of God,) strike such dread into ym, yt by some lads, who lay at scouts in the woods, they were heard to reiterate that confused outerie, (O Hobba-mock, much Hoggerly,) and yn fled confusedly back with all speed, when none pursued ym. One old Button,<sup>3</sup> lately living at Haverhill, who was then almost the only haile man left of yt company, confirmed this to be so to me, accordingly as I formerly had been informed of it."

On the twelfth of October, 1676, one of Mr. Cobbet's sons, named Thomas, a seaman at Portsmouth, was taken, and carried to Mount Desert, by the eastern Indians. He was detained a prisoner till December, when some vessels went out with directions to stipulate for peace. They arrived at Penobscot on the eighth of December. On the next day articles of agreement with the Indians were signed. On the eleventh, Thomas was sent to Penobscot; and on Wednesday, the thirteenth, he

---

<sup>1</sup> Library of the Massachusetts Historical Society.

<sup>2</sup> Common contractions in writing were, ye the, ym them, yn then, yr their or your, yt that, wh which, and wt what.

<sup>3</sup> Matthias Button, a Dutchman, who lived in a thatched house in Haverhill, in 1670. Coffin.

was liberated by Madockawando, an Indian chief, who received a fine coat in exchange. On this subject Mr. Cobbet thus writes, in his letter to Increase Mather. "As to what you querie, whether there were not answers of prayer respecting my captured son, Surely I may truly say his wonderfull preservations in all that 9 weeks time after he was taken, and deliverance at y<sup>e</sup> last, they will be put on that account as answers of prayer; for he was constantly pleaded for by Mr. Moody<sup>1</sup> in his congregation for that end, from his first being taken (of which they first heard) till his redemption. So was he in like sort pleaded for by Mr. Shepard in his congregation at Charlestowne, and by my desire signified that way, by Mr. Philips, Mr. Higginson, Mr. Buckley, in theyr congregations, and I doubt not by yourself, Mr. Thatcher, Mr. Allin, in the 3 Boston churches, besides the prayers going constantly that way for him in y<sup>e</sup> families and closets of godly ones, which heard of his captivity and hazard. He was constantly, as there was cause, remembered in our congregation for that end, and which I may not omit to mention: When Mr. Moody, by a post sent hither, sent me the first news of his taking by the Indians, and their further rage in those parts, calling out for further prayers—I presently caused one of our Deacons to call to my house y<sup>t</sup> very day, as many godly men and theyr wives as were near us, to spend some hours in prayer about the same: about 30 met, several of them prayed, Capt. Lord was with them in it, and with me also, who began and ended that service; and having beg'd some amends of our wasted son Eliezer at home as a pledge of y<sup>e</sup> desired mercies to our captived son abroad as granted, my heart I must acknowledge to the Lord's praise, was sweetly guided in the course of that service, and I was even persuaded that the Lord had heard our prayers in y<sup>t</sup> respect and could not but express as much to some of our godly friends; so was one of our sisters, (as since she informed my wife,) as confidently persuaded that she should ere long see him returned, and that in comfortable plight, as if he were already come." He says that his son Eliezer began to amend, "insomuch that he who before could not walk up and down the town without staggering, could yet walk up that high hill (which you know of,) that is by Mr. Norton's, now our house."

Mr. Cobbet was much respected for his piety and the fervency of his prayers. One of the soldiers in Philip's war,

---

1 Rev. Joshua Moodey, of Portsmouth.

whose name was Luke Perkins, says, that when he was detached, in 1675, to go against the Indians, he went to request the prayers of Mr. Cobbet, who prayed that the company might be preserved, and they all returned in safety.<sup>1</sup>

Some women of his neighbourhood were one day attempting some trick of witchery, when their minister appeared. "There," said one of them, "we can do no more; there is old crooked back Cobbet a coming."

For a considerable time, he was in the practice of walking from Ipswich to Boston, once in two weeks, to attend Mr. Norton's lecture, and to see his old friend, Mr. Whiting. He used to remark that it was worth a journey to Boston, "to hear one of Mr. Norton's good prayers."

The parents of Mr. Cobbet came over some time after his arrival. The name of his wife was Elizabeth, and he had four sons. 1. Samuel, who graduated in 1663. The name of his wife was Sarah, and he had a daughter Margaret, who was born 17 August 1676, and died in the next year. 2. Thomas 3. John. 4. Eliezer.

On the fourteenth of June, in consequence of the scarcity of cloth, the court authorized the Selectmen of every town, to assess each family at one or more spinners<sup>2</sup>

On the nineteenth, Mrs. Ann Hibbins was executed at Boston for witchcraft.<sup>3</sup>

On the twenty fourth, Thomas Loughton, Thomas Marshall, and James Axey, were appointed commissioners to try small causes.<sup>3</sup>

In July, the first persons called Quakers arrived at Boston, from Barbadoes. As their conduct and opinions were regarded as subversive of civil and religious order, the court passed some severe laws against them, and four of them were afterward publicly executed. On the ninth of September, 1661, the King sent an order to Governor Endecott, by Samuel Shattuck of Salem, to discontinue all severities against them.

---

## 1657.

Sagamore Winnepurkitt petitioned the General Court, on the twenty first of May; that he might possess some land, formerly owned by his brother on Mistic river. He was referred to the County Court.<sup>2</sup>

---

1 Q. C. Files.

2 Col. Rec.

3 Col. Files.

Mr. Thomas Dexter, who claimed Nahant as a purchase from Black William, commenced an action, at the Quarterly Court, on the third of June, against the town, for occupying it. The case was defended by Thomas Loughton, George Keysar, Robert Coats, and Joseph Armitage, in behalf of the town. The following depositions were given.

1. "Edward Ireson, aged 57 yeares or thereabouts, sworne, saith, that liveing with Mr. Thomas Dexter, I carried the fencing stuffe which master Dexter sett up to fence in Nahant, his part with the rest of the Inhabitants, and being and living with mr Dexter, I never heard him say a word of his buying of Nahant, but only his interest in Nahant for his fencing with the rest of the inhabitants, this was about 25 yeares since, and after this fence was sett up at nahant, all the new comers were to give two shillings sixpence a head or a piece vnto the setters up of the fence or inhabitants, and some of Salem brought Cattel alsoe to nahant, which were to give soe."<sup>1</sup>

2. "The Testimony of Samuel Whiting sen<sup>r</sup> : of ye Towne of Linne, Saith, that Mr Humphries did desire that mr Eaton and his company might not only buy Nahant, but the whole Towne of Linne, and that mr Cobbet and he and others of the Towne went to mr Eaton to offer both to him, and to commit themselves to the providence of God, and at that time there was none that laid claim to or pleaded any interest in nahant, Save the town, and at that time farmer Dexter lived in the Towne of Linne."<sup>1</sup> The person to whom Lynn was thus offered for sale, was Theophilus Eaton, afterward governor of Connecticut. He came to Boston 26 June 1637, and went to New Haven in August of the same year.

3. "The Dep. of Daniel Salmon, aged about 45 yeares, saith, that he being master Humphreye's servant, and about 23 yeares agoon, there being wolves in nahant, commanded that the whole traine band to goe drive them out, because it did belong to the whole towne, and farmer Dexter's men being then at training, went with the rest."<sup>1</sup>

4. "This I Joseph Armitage, aged 57 or thereabouts, doe testifie, that about fifteen or sixteen yeares agoe, wee had a generall towne meeting in Lin, at that meeting there was much discourse about nahant, the men that did first fence at nahant and by an act of generall court did apprehend by fencing that nahant was theires, myself by purchase haveing a part therein,

after much agitation in the meeting, and by persuasion of mr Cobbitt, they that then did plead a right by fencing, did yield up all their right freely to the Inhabitants of the Towne, of which Thomas Dexter senr was one."<sup>1</sup>

5. "We, George Sagamore and the Sagamore of Agawam, doe testify that Duke William so called did sell all Nahant unto farmer Dexter for a suite of Cloathes, which cloathes farmer Dexter had again, and gave vnto Duke William so called 2 or 3 coates for it again."<sup>1</sup> This deposition was signed with an S, as the mark of Masconomond; and with a bow and arrow, as the mark of Winnepurkitt.

Other depositions were given by Richard Walker, Edward Holyoke, George Farr, Christopher Lindsey, William Dixey, William Witter, John Ramsdell, John Hedge, William Harcher, and John Legg. The court decided in favor of the defendants, and Mr. Dexter appealed to the Court of Assistants.<sup>2</sup>

A vessel owned by Captain Thomas Wiggin of Portsmouth was wrecked on the Long Beach, and the sails, masts, anchor, &c. purchased by Thomas Wheeler, on the third of June.<sup>3</sup>

## 1658.

At the court of Assistants on the thirteenth of May, the towns of Lynn, Reading, and Chelsea, received permission to raise a troop of horse.<sup>4</sup>

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty-ninth of June, Lieutenant Thomas Marshall was authorized to perform the ceremony of marriage, and to take testimony in civil cases.<sup>2</sup>

This year there was a great earthquake in New England,<sup>5</sup> connected with which is the following story.

Some time previous, on one pleasant evening, a little after sunset, a small vessel was seen to anchor near the mouth of Saugus river. A boat was presently lowered from her side, into which four men descended, and moved up the river a considerable distance, when they landed, and proceeded directly into the woods. They had been noticed by only a few individuals; but in those early times, when the people were surrounded by danger, and easily susceptible of alarm, such an

incident was well calculated to awaken suspicion, and in the course of the evening the intelligence was conveyed to many houses. In the morning, the people naturally directed their eyes toward the shore, in search of the strange vessel—but she was gone, and no trace could be found either of her or her singular crew. It was afterward ascertained that, on that morning, one of the men at the Iron Works, on going into the foundry, discovered a paper, on which was written, that if a quantity of shackles, handcuffs, hatchets, and other articles of iron manufacture, were made and deposited, with secrecy, in a certain place in the woods, which was particularly designated, an amount of silver, to their full value, would be found in their place. The articles were made in a few days, and placed in conformity with the directions. On the next morning they were gone, and the money was found according to the promise; but though a watch had been kept, no vessel was seen. Some months afterward, the four men returned, and selected one of the most secluded and romantic spots in the woods of Saugus, for their abode. The place of their retreat was a deep narrow valley, shut in on two sides by high hills and craggy precipitous rocks, and shrouded on the others by thick pines, hemlocks, and cedars, between which there was only one small spot to which the rays of the sun at noon could penetrate. On climbing up the rude and almost perpendicular steps of the rock on the eastern side, the eye could command a full view of the bay on the south, and a prospect of a considerable portion of the surrounding country. The place of their retreat has ever since been called the Pirates' Glen, and they could not have selected a spot on the coast for many miles, more favorable for the purposes both of concealment and observation. Even at this day, when the neighborhood has become thickly peopled, it is still a lonely and desolate place, and probably not one in a hundred of the inhabitants has ever descended into its silent and gloomy recess. There the pirates built a small hut, made a garden, and dug a well, the appearance of which is still visible. It has been supposed that they buried money; but though people have dug there, and in several other places, none has ever been found. After residing there some time, their retreat became known, and one of the king's cruisers appeared on the coast. They were traced to their glen, and three of them were taken, and carried to England, where it is probable they were executed. The other, whose name was Thomas Veal, escaped to a rock in the woods, about two miles to the north, in which was a spacious cavern, where the pirates had



previously deposited some of their plunder. There the fugitive fixed his residence, and practised the trade of a shoemaker, occasionally coming down to the village to obtain articles of sustenance. He continued his residence till the great earthquake this year, when the top of the rock was loosened, and crushed down into the mouth of the cavern, enclosing the unfortunate inmate in its unyielding prison. It has ever since been called the *Pirate's Dungeon*. A part of the cavern is still open, and is much visited by the curious.

### 1659.

A road was laid out from Lynn to Marblehead, over the Swampscot beaches, on the fifth of July. In reference to the part between Broadway and King's Beach, the Committee say, "it has been a country highway thirty and odd years, to the knowledge of many of us."<sup>1</sup>

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty ninth of November, "Thomas Marshall, of Lynn, is allowed by this court, to sell stronge water to traullers, and alsoe other meet provisions."<sup>1</sup>

### 1660.

Mr. Adam Hawkes commenced a suit, in June, against Mr. Oliver Purchis, agent for the Iron Company, for damage by overflowing his land. The following papers relating to this subject, were found in the files of the Quarterly Court.

"The deposition of Joseph Jenks senior, saith, that having conference with adam hawkes about the great dam at the Iron works at Lin, he complayned that he suffered great damage by the water flowing his ground. I answered him, I thought you had satisfaction for all from the old companie, he said he had from the *old* company, and further saith not."

"This, I Charles Phillopes do testifie, that I, keepeing of the watter at the Irone Workes, since Mr. Porchas came there, Mr. Porchas did att all times charge me to keepe the watter Lowe, that it might not damage Mr. Hawkes, which I did, and had much ill will of the workmen for the same."

Others testified that the lands had been much overflowed. Francis Hutchinson said, that the water had been raised so high, that the bridge before Mr. Hawkes's house had several times been broken up, and "the peeces of tember raised up and Made Swenie." John Knight and Thomas Wellman were appointed to ascertain the damage. They stated that the corn had been "Much Spilled,"<sup>1</sup> and the wells "sometimes floted;" that the English grass had been much damaged, and the tobacco lands much injured, "inlaying them so Could." They judged the damage to be "the ualloation of ten pounds a yeere."<sup>2</sup>

---

### 1661.

"At a Generall Towne Meetinge, the 30th of December, 1661, vpon the request of Daniell Salmon for some land, in regard he was a soldier att the Pequid warrs, and it was ordered by vote yt Ensign John ffuller, Allen Breed Senior, and Richard Johnson, should vew the land adjoyninge to his house lott, and to giue report of it vnto the next towne meetinge."<sup>3</sup>

---

### 1662.

Mr. William Longley prosecuted the town, for not laying out to him forty acres of land, according to the division of 1638. The case was defended by John Hathorne and Henry Collins. In March, the court decided that he should have the forty acres of land or forty pounds in money.<sup>2</sup>

On the twenty fifth of March, John Fuller was appointed Clerk of the Writs, and Thomas Marshall and Oliver Purchis, commissioners.<sup>2</sup>

On the thirteenth of May, the boundary line between Lynn and Boston was marked. It ran "from the middle of Bride's brooke, where the foot path now goeth."<sup>3</sup> This line has since become the boundary between Saugus and Chelsea.

For the first time since the organization of the general government in 1634, the town of Lynn sent no representative.

---

1 Spoiled.

2 Q. C. Files and Rec.

3 Town Rec.

## 1663.

On the evening of January twenty sixth, there was an earthquake.

Mr. John Hathorne complained to the church at Lynn, that Andrew Mansfield and William Longley had given false testimony in the recent land case, for which they were censured. They appealed to the county court, accusing Mr. Hathorne of slander, of which he was found guilty. On the fourth of April, the court directed the following letter to the church at Lynn.

“Reverend and loveing friends and brethren, wee understand that John Haythorne hath accused Andrew Maynsfielde and William Longley in the church of Lyn, for giving a false testimony against himselfe and H. Collins att the court of Ipswich in March was 12 month, and for which the said Mansfield and Longley stand convicted in the church, and finding themselves aggrieved thereat, hath brought their complaint against the said Haythorne in several actions of slander, which hath had a full and impartiall heareinge, and due examination, and by the verdict of the jurie the said Haythorne is found guilty. Now because it is much to be desired that contrary judgments in one and the same case may be prevented, if possibly it may be attained, and one power strive not to clash against the other, we thought it expedient, before we give judgment in the case, to comend the same to the serious consideration and further examination of the church. We doubt not but that there hath been even more than a few both in the words and carriage of all the parties concerned, (though not the crime alleadged,) which if it may please God to put into their hearts to see and owne soe as may give the church opportunity and cause to change their mynd and reverse their censures, so farr as concerns the particular case in question, wee hope it will be acceptable to God, satisfactory to ourselves and others, and the beginning of their owne peace and quyet, the disturbance whereof hitherto we are very sensible of and shall at all tymes be ready to afford ym our best releive as we may have opportunity or cognizance thereof. Had you been pleased, before your final conclusion, to have given us the grounds of your offence, wee should kindly have resented such a request, and probably much of your trouble might have been prevented. We have defer’d giving judgment in this case till the next ses-

sion of this Court, to see what effect this our motion may have with y<sup>m</sup>. Now the God of peace and wisdom give y<sup>m</sup> understanding in all things, and guide y<sup>m</sup> to such conclusions, in this and all other causes of concernment, as may be agreeable to his will, and conducing to y<sup>r</sup> peace and welfare. Soe prayes y<sup>r</sup> friends and brethren

ROBERT LORD, *Clerk*.

Apr. 4, 63.

By order of the County Court at Ipswich."

To this letter Mr. Whiting made the following reply, on the fourth of May.

"Honoured and Beloved in y<sup>e</sup> god of Loue.<sup>1</sup>

we haue receiued your Letter which you haue beene pleased to send to vs. wheirin we perceiue how tender you are of our peace & how wisely careful, you declare yo<sup>r</sup> selves to bee in preuenting any clash y<sup>t</sup> might arise betweene y<sup>e</sup> ciuill & ecclesiastical powers, for which wee desire to returne thanks from our hearts to god and unto you concerning y<sup>e</sup> matter you signify to vs. what y<sup>r</sup> pleasure is y<sup>t</sup> wee should attend vnto, we in al humillity of mind & desirous of peace, have been willing to prooue y<sup>e</sup> parties concernd, to see w<sup>t</sup> errors they would see & owne; and for his pt y<sup>t</sup> complayned to vs, hee doth acknowledge his vncomly speeches & carriage both vnto y<sup>e</sup> marshall. hee being y<sup>r</sup> courts officer. & also. to brethren in y<sup>e</sup> church. In y<sup>e</sup> agitation of y<sup>e</sup> matter and doth condemne himselfe for Sin in it. but for y<sup>e</sup> other parties y<sup>t</sup> stand convicted. they either doe not see or will not acknowledg any error concerning their testimony: wh<sup>ch</sup> we Judge they ought. wherefore we humbly present you with these few lynes; not doubting but they will be pleasing to god. & acceptable to you. what ever hath beene suggested to y<sup>r</sup> selves by others. y<sup>t</sup> beare not good will to y<sup>e</sup> peace of our church; wee are sure of this. & our consciences bear vs witnesse: y<sup>t</sup> wee have done nothing in opposition to you. or to cast any reflection vpon your court proceedings: but have Justified you al along in what you had done: *Secundum Allegata et probata*:<sup>2</sup> In al our church agitations which our adversaries can tell. if they would witnesse: but by reason of this. y<sup>t</sup> some of our brethren did sweare contrary oathes. we thought it our duty vpon com-

1 This letter is written in a handsome manner, and is transcribed with the strictest regard to spelling and punctuation.

2 According as they were alleged and proved.

plaint made to vs. to search. whoe they were y<sup>t</sup> swore truly & who did falsifie their oath. & after much debate & dispute on Sunday dayes about this matter: we did Judge those two men faulty. which in conscience. we dare not goe back from. they continuing as they doe to this day. Could we discern. any token of these mens repentance. for this y<sup>t</sup> they are, especially one of them, censured in y<sup>e</sup> church for, we should cheerfully take, off y<sup>e</sup> censures. but Inasmuch as they Justify themselves. and tel vs if it were to doe agayne they would doe it. & lift up their creses<sup>1</sup> in high Langwage & come to such animosities, from y<sup>e</sup> Juries verdict. we desire y<sup>e</sup> honoured court. would not count vs transgressors. if we doe not recede fro w<sup>t</sup> we have done. Espetially considering what disturbers. they have beene to vs; Espetially one of them for these seuerall yeers. Now therefore, Honoured & dear Sirs. Seeing by w<sup>t</sup> we haue done we have gone in or owne way. as. a church: in y<sup>e</sup> search after Sin we hope y<sup>e</sup> Court will be tender of vs and of him y<sup>t</sup> complayned to vs on y<sup>t</sup> accot. & if we humbly craue<sup>2</sup> y<sup>t</sup> it be not grieuous to you y<sup>t</sup> we humbly tell you y<sup>t</sup> in our Judgmt. y<sup>e</sup> discipline of these churches must fall: & if soe: of w<sup>t</sup> sad consequence it wil be. we Leaue it to those y<sup>t</sup> are wiser then<sup>3</sup> ourselues to Judge. for this case being new & neuer acted before in this Country. doth. not only reflect on our church. but on all y<sup>e</sup> churches in y<sup>e</sup> country; for if delinquents. y<sup>t</sup> are censured in churches: shal be countenanced by authority. agnst y<sup>e</sup> church in their acting in a Just way: we humbly put it to y<sup>e</sup> consideration of y<sup>e</sup> Court. whether there will not be a wide door opened to *Erastiannisme*.<sup>4</sup> wh we hope all of vs do abhor. from our hearts. Now y<sup>e</sup> god of peace himselfe. give y<sup>e</sup> Country. Courts. & church espeace. alwaies by al meanes. grace be with you all in christ Jesus: Amen:

SAMUEL WHITING.

Dated y<sup>e</sup> 4<sup>th</sup>. 3d. 63.

with y<sup>e</sup> consent & vote of y<sup>e</sup> church."

On the next day, the Court replied as follows.

"Reverend and beloved. Wee are very sorry our endeavours have not produced that effect we hoped and desired, but seeme to have beene interpreted contrary to our intentions,

1 Crests.

2 Crave.

3 Then was formerly used for than.

4 Thomas Erastus, in 1647, during the civil wars in England, contended that the Church had no power to censure or decree. This opinion was termed Erastianism.

(and, we conceive, our words,) as an incroachment and destructive to the right and power of the churches. Wee have beene taught, and doe verily believe, the civil and ecclesiastical power may very wel consist, and that no cause is so purely ecclesiastical, but the civil power may in its way deale therein. We are far from thinking the churches have no power but what is derived from the christian magistrates, or that the civil magistrate hath ecclesiastical powers, yet may, and ought, the matter so requiring, take cognizance and give judgment in solving a case, not in a church but civil way. Wee suppose wee have kept much within these bounds in the case that hath beene before us, and that our opinion and practice herein hath been as clear from *Erastianisme*, as some men's assertions have been from the opposite error, and the declared Judgments of our congregational divines. In that point, we own and desire so to regulate our proceedings accordingly. The God of order guide all or ministrations to his glory, and the peace and edification of his people.

By order and unanimous consent of the County Court, sitting at Ipswich, May 5th. 1663. p. me.

ROBERT LORD, Cleric.

## 1664.

On the twenty eighth of June, Theophilus Bayley was licensed to keep a public house.<sup>1</sup>

This year the wheat is first mentioned to have been blasted,<sup>3</sup> and little has been raised on the sea coast of New England since.<sup>2</sup>

A public fast was appointed on account of dissensions and troubles.

In November, a comet appeared, and continued visible till February.

## 1665.

On the twenty seventh of June, Thomas Loughton, Oliver Purchis, and John Fuller, were appointed commissioners to try small causes.<sup>3</sup>

1 Q. C. Files.

2 Hubbard.

3 Col. Files.

On the twenty ninth of November, Mr. Joseph Jenks was admonished by the court, for not attending public worship.<sup>1</sup>

---

### 1666.

Mr. Andrew Mansfield was chosen Town Recorder.

On the seventh of December, the court assembled for religious consultation and prayer, in which Mr. Whiting and Mr. Cobbet sustained a part.

---

### 1667.

At the Quarterly Court, on the twenty sixth of June, Nathaniel Kertland, John Witt, and Ephraim Hall, were presented, "for prophaining the Lord's Day By Going to William Craft's house, in time of publike exercise, (they both being at meeting,) and Drinkeing of his sider, and Rosteing his Aples, without eyther the consent or knowledge of him or his wife."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Joseph Jenks presented a petition to the court for aid to commence a wire manufactory, but did not receive sufficient encouragement.<sup>3</sup>

---

### 1668.

The ministers of the several towns assembled in Boston, on the fifteenth of April, to hold a public disputation with the Baptists, Mr. Whiting and Mr. Cobbet were among the principal.

On the thirteenth of June, Robert Page of Boston was presented, "for setinge saille from Nahant, in his boate, being Loaden with wood, there by Profaining the Lord's daye."<sup>3</sup>

Land on the north side of the Common was this year sold for £4, an acre;<sup>3</sup> and good salt marsh, for £1, 10.<sup>3</sup>

---

1 Q. C. Files.

2 Hubbard.

3 Col. Files.

## 1669.

On the twenty ninth of April, the boundary line between Lynn and Salem was defined. It ran from the west end of Brown's pond, in Danvers, "to a noated Spring," now called Mineral Spring; thence to "Chip Bridge" on Hawthorn brook, and through the house of Daniel King senior, to the sea shore.

---

## 1670.

The court ordered, that the lands of deceased persons might be sold for the payment of their debts. Before this, if a person died in debt, his land was secure. The method of conveyance was by "turfe and twig;" that is, the seller gave a turf from the ground, and a twig from a tree, into the hands of the buyer, as a token of relinquishment.

---

## 1671.

On the eighteenth of January, there was a great snow storm, in which there was much thunder and lightning.

The following memorandum is copied from the leaf of a Bible. May 22. "A very awful thunder, and a very great storm of wind and hail, especially at Dorchester town, so that it broke many glass windows at the meeting house."

Mr. Samuel Bennett prosecuted Mr. John Gifford, the former agent of the Iron Works, and attached property to the amount of £400, for labor performed for the company. On the twenty seventh of June, the following testimony was given.

"John Paule, aged about forty-five years, sworne, saith, that living with Mr. Samuel Bennett, upon or about the time that the Iron Works were seased by Capt. Savage, in the year 53 as I take it, for I lived ther several years, and my constant imployment was to repaire carts, coale carts, mine carts, and other working materials for his teemes, for he kept 4 or 5 teemes, and sometimes 6 teemes, and he had the most teemes the last yeare of the Iron Works, when they were seased, and my master Bennet did yearly yearne a vast sum from the said Iron



Works, for he commonly yearned forty or fifty shillings a daye for the former time, and the year 53, as aforesaid, for he had five or six teemes goeing generally every faire day.”<sup>1</sup>

The Iron Works for several years were carried on with vigor, and furnished most of the iron used in the colony. But the want of ready money on the part of the purchasers, and the great freedom with which the company construed the liberal privileges of the court, caused their failure. The owners of the lands which had been injured, commenced several suits against them; and at last hired a person to cut away the flood gates and destroy the works. This was done in the night, when the pond was full. The dam was high, and just below it, on the left, stood the house of Mac Callum More Downing. The water rushed out, and flowed into the house, without disturbing the inhabitants, who were asleep in a chamber. In the morning, Mrs. Downing found a fine live fish flouncing in her oven. The works were much injured, and the depredator fled to Penobscot. The Foundry finally became the property of Major Samuel Appleton. By some means he became obnoxious to the law, and an officer was sent to apprehend him. Seeing the officer approach him, he fled to the hill near his house, and from a rock which has ever since been called Appleton's Pulpit, he held a conference with the officer's party below. Finding his stipulation vain, he fled from the hill, mounted his horse, swam him through the river, and escaped into the woods. The suits against the iron works were protracted for more than twenty years. Mr. Hubbard says “that instead of drawing out bars of iron for the country's use, there was hammered out nothing but contention and law suits.” The works were continued, though on a smaller scale, for more than one hundred years from their establishment. But they have long been discontinued, and nothing now is to be seen of them, except the heaps of scoria, nearly overgrown with grass, and called the “Cinder Banks.” Several old families still retain utensils which were cast at an early period. One of these is a small vessel, capable of containing about one quart; and another, a large iron plate, bearing the date 1650. No mention is made of the failure of the ore, of which specimens may yet be obtained; and it probably remains in sufficient quantity to reward the future labors of enterprize and industry.

## 1672.

Mr. Daniel Sahnnon attached the property of the town, to the value of forty pounds, for not laying out the land granted to him in 1661. On the twenty seventh of June, the Quarterly Court required the town to give him about six acres, near his house.

---

## 1673.

On the eighteenth of June, a new road was laid out from Lynn to Marblehead, on the north of the former road. It is now called Essex Street.

---

## 1674.

Some of the inhabitants of Salem attempted to form a new church, and engaged Mr. Charles Nicholet for their minister; but their design being opposed, they came to Lynn to complete it. Mr. Rogers, Minister of Ipswich, wrote a letter to Mr. Phillips, Minister of Rowley, requesting him to assist in preventing the accomplishment. This letter was handed to Major Dennison, who subjoined the following approbation. "Sir, Though I know nothing of what is above written, I cannot but approve the same in all respects." On Sunday, the eleventh of December, the delegates from the churches of Boston, Woburn, Malden, and Lynn, with the governor, John Leverett, assembled at Lynn, and formed a council. They chose the Rev. John Oxenbridge, of Boston, moderator, and agreed that the new church should be formed. Afterward, the delegates of the churches of Salem, Ipswich, and Rowley, arrived; when the vote of the council was reconsidered, and decided in the negative. In the curious church records of Rowley, it is said that "This work was begun without a sermon, which is not usuall. There was also a breaking out into laughter, by a great part of the congregation, at a speech of Mr. Batters, that he did not approve of what Major Hathorne had spoken. Such carriage was never known on a first day, that I know of." After the frustration of this design, Mr. Nicholet went to England.

The evil effects of the separation from the Church began to

be experienced at a very early period. The dissenters had forsaken an establishment which they admitted was a safe path to salvation, and though they retained what they regarded as the essentials of religious order, yet they had opened the way for continued separation, and they could scarcely complain that others wished to avail themselves of licenses to which they conceived they had an equal right. I do not think however, that men have a right to form their own separate modes of church government, merely because they have the power. Whatever the truth may be, no man has a right to forsake it. He is bound to it as much for the sake of others as for his own. If one man may not abandon the truth, neither have any number a right to do it, however virtuous may be their character, and however honest their motives.

---

### 1675.

This year is remarkable for the commencement of a great war with the Wampanoag Indians, just one hundred years before the war of American Freedom. They were governed by a great chief, called King Philip, who lived at Mount Hope, in Bristol, Rhode Island, and from him it has been called Philip's War. It began in June, and was extended to some of the tribes in the eastern part of New England. As we have received the history of this war only from the pens of white men, it is probable that many incidents, which might serve to illustrate its origin, have been passed unnoticed; and had the relation been given by one of the Indians, the causes might have appeared far more justifiable on their part. It is certain that the Indians regarded themselves as the rightful proprietors of the soil; and there can be no doubt that encroachments were made, if not by the colonial governments, yet by white men, who, in the ironical language of one of the best poets of modern time, had adopted

“ The simple plan,  
That they should take who have the power,  
And they should keep who can.”

Some of the Indians had been killed by the white people; and other injuries of less importance might have contributed to aggravate the feelings of a people barbarous indeed in their general character, but yet highly susceptible of honorable and ungen-

erous treatment. One of the causes of the eastern war, was an insult imposed upon the red people, by some sailors, on the river Saco. Meeting with a canoe, in which were the wife and child of Squando, a Sachem, and having heard that young Indians could swim naturally, they overset the boat, to witness the result. The child instantly sunk; but the mother dived, and brought it up. It died soon after, and its death was charged to the inhumanity of the white men.

On the twenty ninth of August, there was "a very great wind and rain, that blew down and twisted many trees."<sup>1</sup>

The first inhabitant of Lynn called a Quaker,<sup>3</sup> is mentioned, in the records of that society, this year. "Taken away by Nathaniel Kertland, John Burrill, and Thomas Loughton, for the priest, Samuel Whiting, one cow, valued at £3." Others afterward suffered, for refusing to perform military service, and pay parish taxes, by having "sheep, corn, hay, shovels, tongs, chains, and pots of money," taken away.

The troops from Massachusetts, which were sent against the Indians, were placed under the command of Major Samuel Appleton, of Lynn. The military company of Lynn, at this time, was commanded by Captain Thomas Marshall, Lieutenant Oliver Purchis, and ensign John Fuller.

On the thirtieth of November, fifteen men were impressed at Lynn, by order of the court, in addition to those who had previously been detached. Their names were, Thomas Baker, Robert Driver, Job Farrington, Samuel Graves, Isaac Hart, Nicholas Hitchens, Daniel Hitchens, John Lindsey, Jonathan Locke, Charles Phillips, Samuel Rhodes, Henry Stacey, Samuel Tarbox, Andrew Townsend, and Isaac Wellman.<sup>2</sup>

On the twenty ninth of December, there was "A dreadful fight with the Indians, and continued that winter."<sup>1</sup> This was the great swamp fight, at South Kingston, Rhode Island, in which eighty white men, and more than three hundred Indians were killed. In the number of the slain were three of Major Appleton's men, one of whom was Mr. Ephraim Newhall.

---

## 1676.

The war with the Indians was prosecuted, by both parties, with the most determined vigor and cruelty. Many towns

---

1 Bible Leaf.

2 Col. Files.

3 George Oakes.

were burnt, and many of the inhabitants put to death in the most barbarous manner. Great numbers of the Indians were also killed, and those who were taken prisoners were most cruelly sold for slaves to the West Indies, against the earnest entreaties of some of the principal officers. At last, Philip was pursued to a swamp, near his residence at Mount Hope, and killed, on the morning of Saturday, the twelfth of August. After his death, Annawon, Tispaquin, and others of his chiefs and warriors, submitted themselves, on the promise that their lives would be spared; but they were unmercifully put to death. From the expressions of some of them, it is probable that they did not wish to survive the destruction of their nation.

Thus fell Philip, the last great king of the Wampanoags—the last formidable enemy of the English. Like Sassacus, he foresaw the destruction of his nation; but he was at first friendly to the white people, and wept when he heard that some of them had been killed. The pen of the historian will do justice to his patriotism, and the harp of the poet will eulogize him in strains of immortality.

A law had been passed, prohibiting the friendly Indians from going more than one mile from their own wigwams. On the twenty fifth of October, the court agreed that they might go out to gather “chesnuts, and other nuts in the wilderness,” if two white men went with each company, whose charges were to be paid by the Indians.

The injuries which the Indians received in the early history of our country, cannot now be repaired; but the opportunity is afforded for our national government to manifest its high sense of magnanimity and justice, and to evince to the world that republics are not unmindful of honor and right, by redressing any wrongs which the existing red men have received, and by providing for their welfare, in a manner becoming a great and powerful nation, which has received its extensive domains from a people, who are now wandering as fugitives in the land of their fathers. Such conduct, it may reasonably be expected, will receive the approbation of heaven; and it cannot be supposed, that He who watches the fall of the sparrow, will regard its neglect with indifference.

The leaf of the Bible says, there was “a great sickness this year.”

---

## 1677.

The following letter was addressed by Mr. Whiting to Increase Mather.

“ October 1, 1677.

“ Reverend and Dear Cousin. I acknowledge myself much engaged, as to God for all his mercies, so to yourself for your indefatigable labors, both in our church here, and in your writings, which of your love you have sent to me from time to time ; and especially for your late book which you sent to me, wherein you have outdone any that I have seen upon that subject. Go on, dear cousin, and the Lord prosper your endeavors for the glory of his great name, and the good of many souls. And let me beg one request of you, that you would set pen to paper in writing an history of New England, since the coming of our chief men hither ; which you may do, by conferring with Mr. Higginson, and some of the first planters in Salem, and in other places ; which I hope you may easily accomplish, having by your diligence and search found out so much history concerning the Pequot war. And the rather let me entreat this favor of you, because it hath not been hitherto done by any in a polite and scholar like way ; which if it were so done would glad the hearts of the Lord's people, and turn to your great account in the last and great day of the Lord Jesus. Thus commending my love to you, and your loving consort, with thanks to you for your kindness to me and my son when we were last with you at your house, beseeching the Lord to bless you and all yours, not knowing how shortly I must put off this earthly tabernacle, I rest,

SAMUEL WHITING.”<sup>1</sup>

At this time there was but one Post Office in Massachusetts, which was at Boston. On the third of December, the court of Assistants appointed John Hayward Post Master for the whole colony.

On Thanksgiving day, the fourth of December, happened one of the greatest storms ever known in New England. It blew down many houses and many trees.

---

<sup>1</sup> Lib. of Mass. Hist. Soc.

## 1678.

One of the first inhabitants of Nahant was James Mills. His occupation was that of a shepherd, and he lived on the spot where Rice's tavern stands, which has been, for many years, in possession of the family of Breed. His children were Sarah, James, Dorothy, John, Mary, Sarah second, and Rebecca. A little bay, on the south side of Nahant, from its having been the favorite bathing resort of his daughter Dorothy, is still called Dorothy's cove.

The selectmen, or, as they were called, "the seven prudential men," this year, were, Thomas Laighton, Richard Walker, Andrew Mansfield, William Bassett, Nathaniel Kertland, John Burrill, and Ralph King.

The price of corn this year was two shillings a bushel.

On the tenth of June, the first Quaker meetinghouse, in Lynn, "was raised on Wolf Hill," near the spot where their meetinghouse now stands.

The whole town, till the year 1715, was regarded as constituting one parish. The inhabitants generally voted together in its pecuniary affairs, made agreements with the ministers, and paid their taxes in accordance. The first church which they formed was in conformity with the faith of John Calvin. The covenant was long, and, as respects the language, well written; but it has since been laid aside for another more compendious.

Next came the Baptists, about twelve years after the settlement of the town. They made a greater departure from the Church, by denying the right of infants to be baptized, and of adults to partake of the communion, unless baptized by immersion. They found a few supporters, several of whom were brought before the court for their belief; but they did not succeed in forming a society.

Then, forty five years after the settlement, came the followers of George Fox, at first called Quakers, and afterward Friends, who made a still wider separation. They contended that all the existing modes of church government were incorrect; that the custom of ordaining and paying ministers was improper; and that the sacraments of Baptism and the Lord's Supper, two divine ordinances instituted by our Savior himself, should be wholly set aside. This persuasion was a great trial

to the churches of New England, and is mentioned in the sermons of that age as one of the greatest delusions which ever came over a Christian land. They formed a society, which was the second religious assembly in the town.

It is not my design to censure any class of men for their religious belief, for even the Founder of the Church came not to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved; but I do consider it my right and my duty to say, that I regard all the divisions and dissensions of the Christian world, as opposed to the true spirit and intention of the Gospel, and as essentially detrimental to its prosperity. I regard it as the duty of all good men to employ their best exertions to promote union, and to induce all men to return to the fold of Christ, the Shepherd and Bishop of their souls. I do not expect that the union of the Church will be effected without opposition. Human opinion is hard to be shaken, but it will be shaken, and the throne of God will shine out in most resplendent beauty.

It may not be deemed uninteresting by the inhabitants of Lynn, to mention a book, written by the Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, which perhaps occasioned more excitement than any other ever written in New England. It is entitled "The Simple Cbler of Agawam, willing to help mend his native country, lamentably tattered both in upperleather and sole, with all the honest stitches he can take." It was first published in quarto, at London, in 1645, and passed through five editions. It abounds in the most pungent wit and satire, interspersed with some observations of very good sense. He remarks, "What a high pitch of boldness it is, for a man to cut a principal ordinance out of the kingdom of God—what a cruelty it is, to divest children of that only external privilege which their heavenly Father hath bequeathed them, to interest them visibly in Himself, his Son, his Spirit, his covenant of grace, and the tender bosom of their careful mother, the Church—what an inhumanity it is to deprive parents of that comfort they may take, from the baptism of their infants, dying in their childhood." The book concludes with the following stanza.

"And farewell, simple world;  
If thou'lt thy cranium mend,  
There is my Last and All,  
And a Shoemaker's End."



## 1679.

In the number of the early ministers of New England, there were few who deserved a higher celebrity, for the purity of their character, and the fervor of their piety, than the Reverend Samuel Whiting. His name has been frequently overlooked by biographers, and little known and estimated even in his own parish. He has no stone erected to his memory, and the very place where he was buried is known only to a few. Had not Mather sketched his life, and Thomson written his elegy, his name would scarcely have survived.

“Dust long outlasts the storied stone,  
But Thou—thy very dust is gone.”

This is another instance of the truth of the observation, that men are indebted to the poet and the historian for their remembrance to after ages. An honorable memorial of the deserving dead is one of the rewards of goodness, and the very desire of remembrance is itself a virtue. We naturally love the idea that we are remembered by others, and that our names will be known beyond the circle of those with whom we shared the endearments of friendship. It is sweet to think that we have not altogether lived in vain—to persuade ourselves that we have conferred some slight benefit on the world, and that posterity will repay the pleasing debt by mentioning our names with expressions of regard. It is not vanity—it is not ambition—it is a pure love of mankind—an exalting sense of right, that twines itself around every virtuous and noble mind, raising it above the enjoyment of worldliness, and making us wish to prolong our existence in the memory of the good.

Mr. Whiting was born at Boston, in Lincolnshire, England, on the twentieth of November, 1597. His father, Mr. John Whiting, was Mayor of that city in 1600, and 1608; and his brother John obtained the same office in 1655. Having completed his studies in the school of his birth place, young Samuel entered the university at Cambridge; where he had for his classmate, his cousin, Anthony Tuckney, afterward Master of St John's college; with whom he commenced a friendship, which was not quenched by the waters of the Atlantic. He received impressions of piety at an early age, and loved to indulge his meditations in the retired walks of Emanuel College. Having taken his degrees, he entered into holy orders, and be-

came chaplain in a family consisting of five ladies and two knights, Sir Nathaniel Bacon and Sir Roger Townsend, with whom he resided three years. He then went to Lynn, where he spent three years more, a colleague with Mr. Price. While at that place, complaints were made to the Bishop of Norwich, of his nonconformity in administrating the services of the Church, on which he removed to Skirbick. There the complaints were renewed, on which he determined to sell his possessions and embark for America. He remarked, "I am going into the wilderness, to sacrifice unto the Lord, and I will not leave a hoof behind me." The beauty, piety, and harmony of the Church, in our own time, induce us to wonder why a pious man should have objected to her services. But the Church, at that period, demanded more than is now required; and the dissenters, by their repugnance to those ceremonies and requisitions which were excessive, were driven to revolt against those forms which were really judicious.

Mr. Whiting sailed from England in the beginning of April, 1636, and arrived at Boston on the twenty sixth of May. He was very sea sick on his passage, during which he preached but one sermon. He observed, that he would "much rather have undergone six weeks imprisonment for a good cause, than six weeks of such terrible sea sickness." He came to Lynn in June, and was installed on the eighth of November, at the age of thirty nine. He was admitted to the privileges of a freeman on the seventeenth of December. His residence was nearly opposite the meeting house, in Shepard street. He had a walk in his orchard, in which he used to indulge his habit of meditation; and some who frequently saw him walking there, remarked, "There does our dear pastor walk with God every day." An anecdote, related of him, will serve to illustrate his character. In one of his excursions to a neighboring town, he stopped at a tavern, where a company were revelling. As he passed their door, he thus addressed them. "Friends, if you are sure that your sins are pardoned, you may be wisely merry." He is reputed to have been a man of good learning, and an excellent Hebrew scholar. In 1649, he delivered a Latin oration at Cambridge; a copy of which is preserved in the Library of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He employed much of his leisure in reading history; and he could scarcely have chosen a study more indicative of the seriousness and solidity of his mind. He possessed great command over his

passions, was extremely mild and affable in his deportment, and his countenance was generally illumined by a smile. He was chosen moderator in several ecclesiastical councils, and appears to have been generally respected. In his preaching, he was ardent and devoted ; but he was less disposed to frighten his hearers by wild and boisterous efforts, than to win them to virtue by mild and persuasive eloquence.

In the latter part of his life, Mr. Whiting was afflicted by a complication of disorders, and endured many hours of most excruciating pain. But his patience was inexhaustible, and his strength enabled him to continue the performance of the public services till a very advanced age ; in which he was assisted by his youngest son, Joseph. A short time before his death, he presented to the general court a claim, for five hundred acres of land, which he had by deed of gift, from his brother in law, Mr Richard Westland, an Alderman of Boston, in England, who had loaned money to the colony of Massachusetts. As the claim had been some time due, the court allowed him six hundred acres. He made his will on the twenty fifth of February, 1679. He commences thus. "After my committing of my dear flock unto the tender care of that great and good Shepherd, the Lord Jesus Christ." He gave his son Samuel, at Billerica, his house and four hundred acres of land at Dunstable, valued at £ 362, and fourteen acres of marsh at Lynn. He remembered his son John, at Leverton, in England, and his daughters, at Roxbury and Topsfield ; and bequeathed his dwelling house, orchard and eight acres of marsh, at Lynn. to his son Joseph. His money and plate amounted to £ 77, 2 ; and his whole estate to £ 570, 15, 6. He died on the eleventh of December, 1790, at the age of eighty two ; having preached at Lynn forty three years.

The death of Mr. Whiting called forth the following elegy from the pen of Mr Benjamin Thomson, a schoolmaster, born at Braintree, and the first native American poet.

UPON THE VERY REVEREND SAMUEL WHITING.

MOUNT FAME, the glorious chariot of the sun !  
Through the world's cirque, all you, her heralds, run,  
And let this great saint's merits be revealed,  
Which during life he studiously concealed.  
Cite all the Levites, fetch the sons of art,  
In these our dolours to sustain a part ;  
Warn all that value worth, and every one  
Within their eyes to bring a Helicon ;

For in this single person we have lost  
More riches than an India has engrost.

When Wilson, that plerophory of love,  
Did from our banks up to his centre move,  
Rare Whiting quotes Columbus on this coast,  
Producing gems of which a king might boast.  
More splendid far than ever Aaron wore,  
Within his breast this sacred father bore.  
Sound doctrine, Urim, in his holy cell,  
And all perfections, Thummim, there did dwell.  
His holy vesture was his innocence ;  
His speech, embroideries of curious sense.  
Such awful gravity this doctor used,  
As if an angel every word infused ;  
No turgent style, but Asiatic lore ;  
Conduits were almost full, seldom run o'er  
The banks of time—come visit when you will,  
The streams of nectar were descending still.  
Much like septemfluous Nilus, rising so,  
He watered Christians round, and made them grow.  
His modest whispers could the conscience reach,  
As well as whirlwinds, which some others preach.  
No Boanerges, yet could touch the heart,  
And clench his doctrine with the meekest art.  
His learning and his language might become  
A province not inferior to Rome.  
Glorious was Europe's heaven, when such as these,  
Stars of his size, shone in each diocese.

Who writ'st the fathers' lives, either make room,  
Or with his name begin your second tome.  
Aged Polycarp, deep Origen, and such,  
Whose worth your quills, your wits not them enrich ;  
Lactantius, Cyprian, Basil too, the great,  
Quaint Jerome, Austin, of the foremost seat,  
With Ambrose, and more of the highest class,  
In Christ's great school, with honor I let pass,  
And humbly pay my debt to Whiting's ghost,  
Of whom both Englands may with reason boast.  
Nations for men of lesser worth have strove  
To have the fame, and in transports of love  
Built temples, or fixed statues of pure gold,  
And their vast worth to after ages told.  
His modesty forbade so fair a tomb,  
Who in ten thousand hearts obtained a room,

What sweet composure in his angel face !  
What soft affections ! melting gleams of grace !  
How mildly pleasant ! by his closed lips  
Rhetoric's bright body suffers an eclipse.  
Should half his sentences be fairly numbered,  
And weighed in wisdom's scales, 'twould spoil a Lombard,

And churches' homilies but homily be,  
 If, venerable Whiting, set by thee.  
 Profoundest judgment, with a meekness rare,  
 Preferred him to the moderator's chair,  
 Where, like truth's champion, with his piercing eye,  
 He silenced errors, and bade Hectors fly.  
 Soft answers quell hot passions, ne'er too soft,  
 Where solid judgment is enthroned aloft.  
 Church doctors are my witnesses, that here  
 Affections always kept their proper sphere,  
 Without those wilder eccentricities,  
 Which spot the fairest fields of men most wise.  
 In pleasant places fall that people's line,  
 Who have but shadows of men thus divine;  
 Much more their presence, and heaven piercing prayers,  
 Thus many years to mind our soul affairs.

A poorest soil oft has the richest mine!  
 This weighty ore, poor Lynn, was lately thine.  
 O wondrous mercy! but this glorious light  
 Hath left thee in the terrors of the night.  
 New-England, didst thou know this mighty one,  
 His weight and worth, thou'dst think thyself undone.  
 One of thy golden chariots, which among  
 The clergy rendered thee a thousand strong;  
 One who for learning, wisdom, grace and years,  
 Among the Levites hath not many peers:  
 One, yet with God, a kind of heavenly hand,  
 Who did whole regiments of woes withstand;  
 One that prevailed with heaven; one greatly mist  
 On earth, he gained of Christ whate'er he list;  
 One of a world, who was both born and bred  
 At wisdom's feet, hard by the fountain's head.  
 The loss of such a one would fetch a tear  
 From Niobe herself, if she were here.  
 What qualifies our grief, centres in this;  
 Be our loss ne'er so great, the gain is his.

The following epitaph has been applied to him by Cotton Mather.

"In Christo vixi morior, vivoque, Whitingus;  
 Do sordes morti, cetera, Christe, tibi."

In Christ I lived and died, and yet I live;  
 My dust to earth, my soul to Christ, I give.

Mr. Whiting published several works, the principal of which are the following.

1. A Latin Oration, delivered at Cambridge, on Commencement day, 1649.
2. A Sermon, preached before the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, at Boston, 1660.

3. "A Discourse of the Last Judgment, or short notes upon Matthew 25, from verse 31 to the end of the chapter, concerning the Judgment to come, and our preparation to stand before the great Judge of quick and dead ; which are of sweetest comfort to the elect sheep, and a most dreadful amazement and terror to reprobate goats." Cambridge, 1664, 12 mo, 160 pages.

4. "Abraham's humble intercession for Sodom, and the Lord's gracious answer in concession thereto." Cambridge, 1666, 12 mo, 349 pages. From this work the following extracts are taken.

"What is it to draw nigh to God in prayer? It is not to come with loud expressions, when we pray before Him. Loud crying in the ears of God, is not to draw near to God. They are nearer to God, that silently whisper in His ears and tell Him what they want, and what they would have of Him. They have the King's ear, not that call loudest, but those that speak softly to him, as those of the council and bed chamber. So they are nearest God, and have His ear most, that speak softly to Him in prayer.

"In what manner are we to draw nigh to God in prayer? In sincerity, with a true heart. Truth is the Christian soldier's girdle. We must be true at all times ; much more when we fall upon our knees and pray before the Lord.

"We, in this country, have left our near relations, brothers, sisters, fathers' houses, nearest and dearest friends ; but if we can get nearer to God here, He will be instead of all, more than all to us. He hath the fullness of all the sweetest relations bound up in Him. We may take that out of God, that we forsook in father, mother, brother, sister, and friend, that hath been as near and dear as our own soul.

"Even among the most wicked sinners, there may be found some righteous ; some corn among the chaff—some jewels among the sands—some pearls among a multitude of shells.

"Who hath made England to differ from other nations, that more jewels are found there than elsewhere ? or what hath that Island that it hath not received ? The East and West Indies yield their gold, and pearl, and sweet spices ; but I know where the golden, spicy, fragrant Christians be—England hath yielded these. Yet not England, but the grace of God, that hath been ever with them. We see what hope we may have concerning New-England ; though we do not deserve to be named the same day with our dear mother."

In enumerating the evils, with which the people of New-England were obliged to contend, he says, it is cause "for humiliation, that our sins have exposed us to live among such wicked sinners"; with whom he ranks "Atheists and Quakers."

Mr. Whiting married two wives in England. By his first wife he had three children. Two of them were sons, who, with their mother died in England. The other was a daughter, who came with her father to America, and married Mr. Thomas Weld of Roxbury.

His second wife was Elizabeth St. John, of Bedfordshire, to whom he was married in 1630. She came to Lynn with her husband, and died on the third of March, 1677, aged seventy two years. She was a woman of uncommon piety, seriousness, and discretion; and not only assisted her husband in writing his sermons, but by her care and prudence relieved him from all attention to temporal concerns. By her he had six children; four sons, and two daughters. One daughter married the Rev. Jeremiah Hobart, of Topsfield; and one son and one daughter died at Lynn. The other three sons received an education at Cambridge.

1. Rev. Samuel Whiting junior, was born in England 1633. He studied with his father at Lynn, and graduated at Cambridge in 1653. He was ordained minister of Billerica, 11 November, 1663; preached the Arrtillery Election Sermon in 1682; and died 28 February 1713, aged 79 years. The name of his wife was Dorcas, and he had ten children. 1. Elizabeth. 2. Samuel. 3. Rev. John, minister at Lancaster; where he was killed by the Indians, 11 September 1697, at the age of 33. 4. Oliver. 5. Dorothy. 6. Joseph. 7. James. 8. Eunice. 9. Benjamin. 10. Benjamin.

2. Rev. John Whiting, graduated at Cambridge in 1653. He returned to England, became a minister of the Church, and died at Leverton, in Linconshire very extensively respected.

3. Rev. Joseph Whiting, graduated in 1661. He was ordained at Lynn, 6 October 1680; and soon after removed to Southampton, on Long Island. He married Sarah Danforth, of Cambridge, daughter of Thomas Danforth, deputy Governor; by whom he had six children, born at Lynn. 1. Samuel, born 3 July, 1674. 2. Joseph, born 22 November, 1675. 3. Joseph, born 8 May, 1677. 4. Thomas, born 20 May, 1678. 5. Joseph, born 14 January, 1680. 6. John, born 20 January, 1681. All, except the first and sixth, died within a few weeks of their birth.

Of the descendants of Mr Whiting, now living, are the Rev. Samuel Whiting, minister at Billerica ; and Henry Whiting, a Major in the service of the United States, and author of a beautiful little Indian tale, entitled *Ontwa, or the Son of the Forest*.

---

### 1680.

On the sixth of October, Mr Jeremiah Shepard was ordained pastor, and Mr Joseph Whiting teacher, of the church at Lynn.

On the eighteenth of November, a very remarkable comet made its appearance, and continued about two months. The train was thirty degrees in length, very broad and bright, and nearly attained the zenith. A memorandum, on a Bible leaf, thus remarks. "A blazing star, at its greatest height, to my apprehension, terrible to behold." It was regarded by most people with fear, as the sign of some great calamity. This was the comet on which Sir Isaac Newton made his interesting observations. While the party, who were predominant in religious affairs, were noting every misfortune, which befel those of a different opinion, as the judgments of God ; they, on the other hand, regarded the earthquakes, the comets, and the blighting of the wheat, as manifestations of his displeasure against their persecutors.

Dr. Philip Read, of Lynn, complained to the Court at Salem, of Mrs. Margaret Gifford, as being a witch. She was a respectable woman, and wife of Mr John Gifford, formerly agent for the Iron Works. The complainant said, "he verily believed that she was a witch, for there were some things which could not be accounted for by natural causes." Mrs Gifford gave no regard to her summons, and the court very prudently suspended their inquiries.

---

### 1681.

In town meeting, on the second of March, the people voted, that Mr Shepard should be allowed eighty pounds, lawful money, a year, for his salary ; one third of which was to be paid in money, and the other two thirds in articles of domestic production, at stipulated prices. Besides the salary, a contribution was to be kept open.



## 1682.

The meeting house, now belonging to the first parish, was this year removed from Shepard street to the centre of the Common, and rebuilt. The new house was fifty feet long and forty four wide. It had folding doors on three sides without porches. The top of each door was formed into two semicircular arches. The windows consisted of small diamond panes, set in sashes of lead. The floor was at first supplied with seats; and pews were afterward separately set up by individuals, as they obtained permission of the town. By this means the interior came at length to present a singular appearance. Some of the pews were large, and some small—some square, and some oblong—some with seats on three sides, and some with a seat on one side—some with small oak pannels, and some with large pine ones—and most of them were surmounted by a little balustrade, with small columns, of various patterns, according to the taste of the proprietors. Most of the square pews had a chair in the centre, for the comfort of the old lady or gentleman, the master or mistress of the family by whom it was occupied. One pew, occupied by black people, was elevated above the stairs in one corner, near to the ceiling. The galleries were extended on three sides, supported by six oak columns, and guarded by a turned balustrade. They were ascended by two flights of stairs, one in each corner on the south side. The pulpit was on the north side, and sufficiently large to contain ten persons. The top of the room was unceiled for many years, and exhibited enormous beams of oak, traversing the roof in all directions. The roof presented four pediments, and was surmounted by a cupola, with a roof in the form of an inverted tunnel. It had a small bell, which was rung by a rope descending in the centre of the room. The town meetings continued to be held in this house till 1806.

A house was built for the sexton, a few poles east of the meeting house, which is still standing, with a small garden enclosed. This house, after some years, became private property, and as such it remains. It is hoped that the good taste of the people of Lynn will induce them to improve the first opportunity to purchase this land, and remove the house, with the town house and gun house, to some more suitable place; by which the beauty of the Common would be much increased.

This year, the heirs of Major Thomas Savage sold the six hundred acres, called Hammersmith, or the lands of the Iron Works, to Samuel Appleton of Lynn, for £250. In 1688, Mr. Appleton sold this tract of land, "antiently purchased of Thomas Dexter and others," with the Iron Works upon it, to James Taylor, then of Boston, for £500. Mr Samuel Appleton, the second of that name, does not appear to have been a regular inhabitant of Lynn, though he is mentioned as being sometimes here. His home was at Ipswich. His son Samuel, the proprietor of the Iron Works, was an inhabitant of Lynn, and had three children born here. He removed to Boston about the year 1688, and was a Colonel in the unsuccessful attack on Port Royal in 1707.

The law, passed in 1659, that no person should observe the festival of Christmas, on the penalty of five shillings, was this year very properly repealed.

---

### 1684.

Winnapurkitt, the last Sagamore of the Saugus Indians, died this year. He was the proprietor of the tract of land on which Marblehead is built; which was sold to that town, by his heirs, on the sixteenth of July.

A letter, written at Haverhill this year, by N. Saltonstall, to the Captain of a militia company, thus proceeds. "I have orders also, to require you, to provide a flight of colors for your foot company, the ground field or flight whereof is to be green, with a red cross in a white field in the angle, according to the ancient custom of our own English nation, and the English plantations in North America, and our own practice in our ships." This was the American standard, till the stripes and stars were introduced in 1776.

---

### 1685.

The following singular deposition is transcribed from the files of the Quarterly Court, and is dated July 1, 1685.

"The deposition of Joseph Farr and John Burrill, junior, testifieth and saith, that they being at the house of Francis Burrill, and there being some difference betwixt Francis Bur-

rill and Benjamin Farr, and we abovesaid understanding that the said Benjamin Farr had been a suitor to Elizabeth Burrill, the daughter of Francis Burrill, and he was something troubled that Benjamin had been so long from his daughter, and the said Francis Burrill told the said Benjamin Farr that if he had more love to his marsh, or to any estate of his, than to his daughter, he should not go into his house; for he should be left to his liberty, he should not be engaged to any thing more than he was freely willing to give his daughter, if he had her; and this was about two days before they was married."

At a town meeting, on the first of December, the people voted, that no inhabitant should cut any green tree upon the common lands, which was less than one foot in diameter.

---

## 1686.

Mr. Oliver Purchis was chosen Town Clerk.

"A great and terrible drouth, mostly in the 4th month, and continued in the 5th month, with but little rain; but the 18th, being the Sabbath, we had a sweet rain." <sup>1</sup>

---

## 1687.

At a town meeting, on the fifteenth of February, "the town voted the Selectmen be a committee to look after encroached lands, or highways, from Francis Burrill's barn to the gate that is by Timothy Breed's, or parcels of lands in places least prejudicial to the town, and make good sale of any of them on the town's behalf, for money to pay the Indians at the time appointed, and the necessary charges of that affair." <sup>2</sup>

On the sixteenth of February, Captain Thomas Marshall exchanged, with the town, his right in Stone's meadow, in Lynnfield, for a right in Edward's meadow; and the town, at the request of Mr. Shepard, made a grant of it to the ministry.

## 1688.

The revenge which had been burning in the breasts of the eastern Indians for twelve years, for their friends killed and sold into slavery in 1676, this year broke out into open war. Their animosity was increased by the instigation of Baron De St. Castine, a Frenchman, who married a daughter of Madockawando, the Penobscot Chief. His house had been plundered by Sir Edmund Andros, the governor of Massachusetts, and this induced him to join with the Indians. The French, of Canada, also united with them in their depredations ; which were continued with intervals, till 1698, under the appellation of Castine's war. A company of soldiers from Lynn, were impressed, by order of the governor, and sent out against the Indians, in the depth of winter. One of the soldiers from Lynn, Mr. Joseph Ramsdell, was killed by them, at Casco Bay, in 1690.

---

## 1689.

The government of Sir Edmund Andros was not congenial with the feelings of the people of New England. He had been appointed Governor, not only of Massachusetts, but of all New England, in 1686 ; and his administration for nearly three years, was characterized by acts of arbitrary power. On the eighteenth of April, 1689, the people rose in arms, resumed the power from Sir Edmund, and confined him a prisoner on Fort Hill, in Boston, until he was sent back to England.

Among the instances of his assumption, was that of claiming the Nalants, with the intention of bestowing them upon his Secretary, Edward Randolph, as a reward for his services. The following papers, transcribed from the files of the Court, will exhibit his encroachments, upon the rights of the people of Lynn, and their sufferings during his administration.

"At Lynn, the 24th May, 1689, upon a signification from Captain Jonathan Corwin of the Committee of the County of Essex, to make enquiry into the grievances suffered under the late government, that it is expressed, that this town, or any inhabitants therein, that have been aggrieved or burthened, do manifest the same under their hand, to the Committee aforesaid, or to Captain Jonathan Corwin to make known the same. We the Committee, chosen by the inhabitants of Lynn, on the

20th of May, 1689, to consider of the signification abovesaid, and to draw up what grievances and burthens we have sustained by the late government, &c. do declare, viz. that this poor town of Lynn have sustained great wrong and damage by the said late government; in that our orderly, honest, and just rights, in a tract of land within the bounds of Lynn, called Nahants, that hath been injoyed, possessed, built upon, and improved, by fencing, planting, and pasturing, &c. by the township of Lynn, *well onward to sixty years*; and yet by the unjurious, unjust, and covetous humors of some very illminded persons, upon petitions preferred—as Mr. Randolph first, and Mary Daffin of Boston in the second place, when Mr. Randolph could not make his petition true and valid, then he throweth in Mary Daffin her petition for the same lands, and as unjustly founded as Mr. Randolph's. But on their two petitions and vain pretences, we, the poor people of Lynn, have been, by orders from the governor and council, called, summoned, and ordered to appear at Boston, and to shew and make good title to said lands, before Sir Edmund Andros, and his council, at one sitting, and a second sitting, and so a third, and a fourth, to our great loss, and expense of time and monies, and no advantage nor benefit to us, because of delays and procrastinations, to scue our monies out of our hands, and to make us pay, with a vengeance, for such writings as we must be constrained to take forth. And thus we have been grieved and oppressed, and put to loss, cost, and damage, near one hundred pounds, and never the better, no justice done us, and at last put upon a threatened necessity of patenting our own old enjoyed properties, and a denial of our rights in any of our commons, always injoyed, but now called King's lands, and we denied to be any town. Thus we have been perplexed, vexed, and oppressed, and impoverished; and except the Lord had wrought for us, whose name we bless, and give thanks to the worthy gentlemen, his instruments, we had been the worst of bondmen.—Furthermore, we were debarred, by the late government, of our constant liberty of town meetings but once in a year, whereby we could not meet to consult of defending our rights in the premises, because it should be charged with riot; and also of keeping a watch for our security from any dangers we had too just cause to fear, which was our great grief and burthen; and our abuses by the profane farmers of excise; and our sons, neighbours, and servants, impressed and sent out so remote in the winter season, and constrained hereunto, and all sufferings,

and we understand not upon what grounds. Per order of, or in the name of the Town and Committee.

OLIVER PURCHIS *Cleric.*

*Boston, in New England, January 24, 1689, [90.]*

Sworn by Mr Oliver Purchis, before

THOMAS DANFORTH *Deputy Governor."*

"Jeremiah Shepard, aged forty two years, and John Burrill, aged fifty seven years, we whose names are subscribed, being chosen by the inhabitants of Lynn, in the Massachusetts Colony in New England, to maintain their right to their properties and lands, invaded by Sir Edmund Andros's government, we do testify that, (beside Sir Edmund Andros his unreasonable demands of money, by way of taxation, and that without an assembly and deputies sent from our towns, according to ancient custom, for the raising of money and levying of rates,) our properties, our honest, and just, and true titles to our land were also invaded; and particularly a great and considerable tract of land, called by the name of the Nalants, the only secure place for the grazing of *some thousands* of our sheep, and without which our inhabitants could neither provide for their families, nor be capacitated to pay dues, or duties for the maintenance of the public, but, (if dispossessed of, the town must needs be impoverished, ruined, and rendered miserable. Yet this very tract of land, being petitioned for by Edward Randolph, was threatened to be rent out of our hands, notwithstanding our honest and just pleas for our right to the said land, both by alienation of the said land to us by the original proprietors, the natives, to whom we paid our monies by way of purchase, and notwithstanding near sixty years peaceable and quiet possession, and improvement, and also enclosure of the said land by a stone wall; in which tract of land also, two of our patentees were interested in common with us, viz. Major Humfrey and Mr. Johnson; yet Edward Randolph petitioning for the said land, Sir Edmund, the governor, did so far comply with his unreasonable motion, that we were put to great charges and expense for the vindication of our honest rights thereto. And being often before the governor, Sir Edmund, and his council, for relief, yet could find no favor of our innocent cause by Sir Edmund; notwithstanding our pleas of purchase, ancient possession, enclosure, grant of general court, and our

necessitous condition ; yet he told us that all these pleas were insignificant, and we could have no true title, until we could prove a patent from the king ; neither had any person a right to one foot of land in New England, by virtue of purchase, possession, or grant of court ; but if we would have assurance of our lands, we must go to the king for it, and get patents of it. Finding no relief, (and the governor having prohibited town meetings,) we earnestly desired liberty for our town to meet, to consult what to do in so difficult a case and exigency, but could not prevail ; Sir Edmund angrily telling us that there was no such thing as a town in the country ; neither should we have liberty so to meet ; neither were our ancient records, (as he said,) which we produced for our vindication of our title to the said lands, worth a rush. Thus were we from time to time unreasonably treated, our properties, and civil liberties, and privileges invaded, our misery and ruin threatened and hastened, till such time as our country, groaning under the unreasonable heavy yoke of Sir Edmund's government, were constrained forcibly to recover our rights and privileges.

JEREMIAH SHEPARD.

JOHN BURRILL."

"Jeremiah Shepard, minister, and John Burrill, lieutenant, both of Lynn, personally appeared before us, and made oath to the truth of this evidence.

JOHN HATHORNE, } *Assistants.*  
JONATHAN CORWIN, }

*Salem, February 3, 1689, 90.*

The first monthly meeting of the society of Friends in Lynn, was held at the house of Samuel Collins, on the eighteenth of July. There were but five Lynn men present.

## 1691.

Lieutenant John Burrill was chosen Representative "to the great and generall court." The pay of a representative was three shillings a day.

Mr. John Burrill junior, was chosen Town Clerk, in which office he continued thirty years.

April 14. "Clement Coldam and Joseph Hart were chosen cannoners, to order and look after the great guns."

July 13. Lieutenant John Fuller was chosen Clerk of the Writs. It is thus evident that this office was not the same as that of Town Clerk.

On the northern shore of Nahant is a ledge of rock, which contains a portion of iron. Some of it was smelted in the foundry at Sangus, and more was taken for the forge at Braintree. "It was voted that Mr. Hubbard of Braintree, should give three shillings for every ton of Rock Mine, that he has from Nahant, to the town, for the town's use, and he to have so much as the town sees convenient."

Mr. William Bassett was Quarter Master in the militia, and collector of the parish taxes. People who held offices, were generally better known by their titles, than by their first names.

December 21. At a meeting of the Selectmen, "Mr. Shepard, with his consent, was chosen Schoolmaster for the year ensuing."

---

## 1692.

January 8. "It was voted that Lieutenant Blighe should have liberty to set up a pew, in the north east corner of the meeting house, by Mr. King's pew, and he to maintain the windows against it.

"The town did vote, that Lieutenant Fuller, Lieutenant Lewis, Mr. John Hawkes senior, Francis Burrill, Lieutenant Burrill, John Burrill junior, Mr. Henry Rhodes, Quarter Master Bassett, Mr. Haberfield, Cornet Johnson, Mr. Bayley, and Lieutenant Blighe, should set at the table.

"It was voted, that Matthew Farrington senior, Henry Silsbee, and Joseph Mansfield senior, should set in the deacon's seat.

"It was voted, that Thomas Farrar senior, Crispus Brewer, Allen Breed senior, Clement Coldam, Robert Rand senior, Jonathan Hudson, Richard Hood senior, and Sergeant Haven, should set in the pulpit.

"The town voted, that them that are surviving, that was chosen by the town a committee to erect the meeting house, and Clerk Potter to join along with them, should seat the inhabitants of the town, in the meeting house, both men and



women, and appoint what seats they shall set in ; but it is to be understood, that they are not to seat neither the table, nor the deacon's seat, nor the pulpit, but them to set there as are voted by the town."

"The town voted that Mr. Shepard should have liberty to remove Mr. Shepard's pew, and to set it adjoining at the eastward end of the pulpit."—T. R.

Lieutenant John Lewis, Cornet Samuel Johnson, John Witt, Joseph Breed, Thomas Farrar, junior, Joseph Newhall, and John Burrill, junior, were chosen Selectmen, "to order the prudential affairs of the town." These were the first Selectmen of Lynn whose names are regularly recorded.

"The town voted, that the persons undernamed, in answer to their petition, should have liberty of the hindmost seat in the gallery to set in, and fit it up as well as they please, in the northeast corner, provided they do no damage in hindering the light of the window. Sarah Hutchins, Mary Newhall, Rebeckah Ballard, Susannah Collins, Rebeckah Collins, Ruth Potter, Jane Ballard, Sarah Farrington, Rebeckah Newhall, Elizabeth Norwood, Mary Habertfield." T. R.

The year 1692 has been rendered memorable in the annals of our country, by the great excitement and distress occasioned by imputed Witchcraft. It was an awful time for New England. Superstition was abroad in her darkest habiliments, scourging the land with the judgement of God. No one but trembled before the breath of the invisible destroyer, for no one was safe. It seemed as if a legion of the spirits of darkness had been set free from their prison house, with power to infect the judgement of the rulers, and to sport, in their wanton malice, with the happiness and the lives of the people. The stories of necromancy in the darkest ages of the world—the tales of eastern genii—the imaginary delineations of the poet and the romancer—wild, and vague, and horrible as they may seem—fall far short of the terrible realities, which were performed in the open daylight of New England. The pestilent blast that passes over a land, and causes its victims, as they inhale it, to fall—silently—one by one—and without warning—seems but a shadow of the desolation which passed through the principle towns of Essex. The mother at midnight pressed her unconscious children to her trembling bosom—and the next day she was standing before a court of awful men, with her life suspended on the breath of imagination—or

barred within the walls of a prison, and guarded by an armed man, as if she were a thing to be feared—or swinging in the breeze between earth and sky—modest, gentle, defenceless woman—with thousands of faces gazing up at her, with commingled expressions of pity and imprecation. The father too returned from his work at eve, to his peaceful household—and and in the morning he was lying extended on a rough plank—with a heavy weight pressing on his breast—till his tongue had started from his mouth—and his soul had gone up to Him who gave it—and all this, that he might be made to confess an imaginary crime.

The alarm of witchcraft commenced in February, in what is now the first parish in Danvers, and extended through several of the neighboring towns. Within six months, thirteen women and six men were hung, and one man pressed to death. More than one hundred other persons were imprisoned, of whom the four following belonged to Lynn.

1. Thomas Farrar was brought before the court at Salem, on the eighteenth of May, and sent to prison at Boston. He lived on Sagamore Hill, and died 23 February, 1694. Thomas Farrar, junior, mentioned on the preceding page, was his son.

2. Elizabeth Hart, the wife of Isaac Hart, who lived in Boston street, was arraigned and sent to Boston on the same day with Mr. Farrar. She died 28 November, 1700.

3. Sarah Bassett, wife of William Bassett, junior, who lived in Nahant street, was tried at Salem on the twenty third of May, and sent to prison at Boston.

4. Sarah, wife of John Cole, was tried at Charlestown, on the first of February, 1693, and acquitted. Elizabeth, wife of John Proctor of Danvers, one of the accused, was a daughter of William Bassett of Lynn.

---

## 1694.

The society of Friends having increased, Mr Shepard became alarmed at their progress, and appointed the nineteenth of July, as a day of fasting and prayer, “that the spiritual plague might proceed no further.”

At a town meeting on the twenty fifth of July; “The constables personably appearing, and declaring that they had all warned their several parts of the town, according to their warrants, and so many being absent from said meeting; the

town did then vote and give power to Jacob Knight, in behalf of the town, to prosecute against any and every person or persons, that has not attended this meeting, according to the bye laws, or town orders." T. R.

The practice prevailed for many years, of warning out of the town, by a formal mandamus of the selectmen, every family and individual, rich or poor, who came into it. This was done to exonerate the town from any obligation to render support in case of poverty. One old gentleman, who had just arrived in town, to whom this order was read, took it for a real intimation to depart. "Come wife," he says, "we must pack up. But there—we have one consolation for it—it is not so desirable a place!"

---

### 1695.

The property of the Nahants appears to have been a cause of contention from the first settlement of the town. This year they were claimed by the heiresses of Richard Woody of Boston; into whose claim they probably descended by a mortgage of one of the Sagamores. At a town meeting, on the eighteenth of October, "There being a summons read, wherein was signified that the lands called Nahants were attached by Mrs. Mary Daffern of Boston, and James Mills summoned to answer said Daffern at an inferior court, to be holden in the county of Essex on the last Tuesday of December 1695; the town did then choose Lieutenant Samuel Johnson, Joseph Breed, and John Burrill, junior, to defend the interests of the town in the lands called Nahants, and to employ an attorney or attorneys, as they shall see cause, in the town's behalf, against the said Daffern, and so from court to court, till the cause be ended—they or either of them—and the town to bear the charge."—T. R.

The following is transcribed from the records of the Quarterly Court, December thirty first.

"Mrs. Mary Daffern and Mrs. Martha Padishall, Widows, and heiresses of Richard Woodey, late of Boston, deceased, plaintiffs, versus John Atwill junior, of Lynn, in an action of trespass upon the case, &c. according to writ, dated 30th September, 1695. The plaintiffs being called three times, made default, and are nonsuited. The judgement of the court is, that plaintiffs pay unto the defendants costs."

## 1696.

January 13. "The Selectmen did agree with Mr. [Abraham] Normenton to be Schoolmaster for the town, for the year ensuing; and the town to give him five pounds for his labor; and the town is to pay twenty five shillings towards the hire of Nathaniel Newhall's house to keep school in, and the said Mr. Normenton to hire the said house."—T. R.

Immense numbers of great clams were thrown upon the beaches by storms. The people were permitted, by a vote of the town, to dig and gather as many as they wished for their own use, but no more; and no person was allowed to carry any out of the town, on a penalty of twenty shillings. The shells were gathered in cart loads on the beach, and manufactured into lime.

This year, two Quakers, whose names were Thomas Farrar and John Hood, for refusing to pay parish taxes, suffered nearly one month's imprisonment at Salem.

The winter of this year was the coldest since the first settlement of New England.

## 1697.

On the eighth of January, the town, by vote, set the prices of provisions, to pay Mr. Shepard's salary, as follows. Beef, 3d. pork, 4d. a pound. Indian corn, 5s. barley, barley malt, and rye, 5s. 6d. and oats, 2s. a bushel.

March 8. "The town did vote, that every householder in the town should, some time before the fifteenth day of May next, kill or cause to be killed, twelve blackbirds, and bring the heads of them, at or before the time aforesaid, to Ebenezer Stocker's, or Samuel Collins's, or Thomas Burrage's, or John Gowing's, who are appointed and chose by the town to receive and take account of the same, and take care this order be duly prosecuted; and if any householder as aforesaid shall refuse or neglect to kill and bring the heads of twelve blackbirds, as aforesaid, every such person shall pay three pence for every blackbird that is wanting, as aforesaid, for the use of the town."—T. R.

**1698.**

On the fourth of January, Oliver Elkins and Thomas Darling killed a wolf in Lynn woods. On the twenty eighth of February, Thomas Baker killed two wolves. This year also, James Mills killed five foxes on Nahant. Twenty shillings were allowed by the town for killing a wolf, and two shillings for a fox.

The town ordered that no person should cut more than seven trees on Nahant, under a penalty of forty shillings for each tree exceeding that number.

This year the first stone was erected on the burying ground, which was then unenclosed, over the body of Mr. John Clifford, who died on the seventeenth of June, in the sixty-eighth year of his age.

---

**1699.**

The platform of the meeting house was covered with lead. The bell was taken down, and sent to England to be exchanged for a new one. Mr Shepard's salary was reduced to sixty pounds.

On the seventh of November, the town ordered that any person who should follow the wild fowl in the harbor, in a canoe, to shoot at them, or frighten them, should pay twenty shillings; and Thomas Lewis and Timothy Breed were chosen to enforce the order.

---

**1700.**

On the twenty fifth of May, Mr. John Witt killed a wolf.

At a meeting of the Selectmen on the seventh of June, Mr. Shepard was chosen to keep a grammar school; for which thirty pounds were the next year allowed.

---

**1702.**

On the sixteenth of March, Mr. Walter Phillips killed a wolf.

On the fourteenth of December, ten pounds were allowed for the maintenance of a grammar master ; “and such master to have over and above the said ten pounds 2 pence per week for such as are sent to read, 3 pence per week for them that are sent to write and cipher, and 6 pence per week for them that are sent to learn Latin, to be paid by parents and masters that send their children or servants to learn as aforesaid.” T. R.

---

### 1701.

This year another war was prosecuted with the French and Indians, called Queen Anne’s War. It was begun by the Indians in the preceding year, and was productive of the most dreadful cruelty. Several of the soldiers from Lynn were taken prisoners. It continued about a year.

Colonel Benjamin Church, who commanded in this expedition, wrote a letter to Governor Dudley, requesting. “That four or five hundred pair of good Indian shoes be made ; and let there be a good store of cow hides, well tanned, for a supply of such shoes, and hemp to make thread, and wax, to mend and make more such shoes when wanted, and a good store of awls.”<sup>1</sup>

On the sixth of March, the town, “being informed that several persons had cut down several trees or bushes in Nahants, whereby there is like to be no shade for the creatures,” voted that no person should cut any tree or bush there, on a penalty of ten shillings.

Mr. Ivory Curwin was master of the grammar school.

---

### 1706.

This year the common lands were divided among the freeholders, according to their possessions within fence. The Nahants, which were now established as the property of the town, were included in the division. The Common only was excepted, which was called the Training Field. The division was made by a committee of three persons, inhabitants of other towns, who were chosen on the fifteenth of April. They were Captain Samuel Gardner of Salem, Mr. John Greenland of

---

<sup>1</sup> Church’s Indian Wars.

Malden, and Lieutenant Joseph Stacey of Chelsea. They were directed to allow each proprietor at least one fourth part upland, and as near his own home as might be consistent with the welfare of the whole. In other respects they were to be governed by such rules, of their own forming as they should consider most equitable. These rules were the following.

1. Each person's land was affixed to the right owner; those persons, whose names, by reason of poverty or captivity, had been omitted, were added; and those persons who had built houses after 1694, were privileged only for the number of acres they possessed.

2. Those who had from five to seven acres, were privileged for one acre more.

3. Those who had from eight to twenty acres, were allowed only for the exact number.

4. Those who had from twenty to thirty acres, were privileged for only one fourth part above twenty acres; and those who had thirty acres, were allowed for only one eighth part above that number. The proprietors were also privileged to pass freely over each other's lots, with teams, according to their own convenience. A few of the proprietors entered their dissent, in the town book, against this privilege. The wood lands were laid out in ranges, forty poles in width; and these were subdivided into lots, containing from twenty poles to thirty five acres. The Nahants were laid out in similar ranges, and subdivided into small lots, containing from twenty poles to five acres.

The town tax was one hundred and ten pounds; eighty pounds for Mr. Shepard's salary, and thirty pounds to pay the Schoolmaster, and other town debts. The school was kept three months. Mr. Shepard was allowed twenty cords of wood, included in the salary. The price of oak wood, this year, was ten shillings a cord.

---

## 1712.

That part of the town now called Lynnfield, was set off as a district, on the seventeenth of November. The inhabitants were to be freed from parish taxes, as soon as a meeting house should be built, and a minister settled. The people of Lynnfield, in the town records, are called "our neighbors, the farmers."

This year, all the shells, which came upon the Nahant beaches, were sold by the town, to Daniel Brown, and William Gray, for thirty shillings. They were not to sell the shells for more than eight shillings a load, containing forty eight bushels, heaped measure. The people were permitted to dig and gather the clams as before, but they were required to open them on the beach, and leave the shells. The house in which I was born, was plaistered with lime made from these shells.

---

### 1713.

Mr. John Merriam was employed as Schoolmaster. The school was called a grammar school, because Latin was taught in it. The other studies were reading, writing, and ciphering. English grammar was not a common study, and no book on that subject was introduced into general use, till about seventy years after this time. No arithmetic was used by the scholars, but the master wrote all the sums on the slate. No spelling book was used. The reading books were the New Testament, and the Psalms of David—the translation which is found in the Prayer Book of the Church.

---

### 1715.

The first meeting house in the second parish, now Lynnfield, was built. When the building of the first parish meeting house was in contemplation, the people of the northern part of the town, being obliged to travel six or eight miles to meeting, wished to have the house placed in a central situation, and a committee was appointed to “chuse” a place. They selected a hill, now included in the bounds of Saugus, which was thence called Harmony Hill. It was afterward determined to place the house on the Common, and the people of Lynn continued to attend meeting there till this year.

---

### 1716.

A gentleman, whose name was Bishop, was Schoolmaster. Mr. Ebenezer Tarbox was chosen, by the town, as Shepherd. Three porches were added to the first parish meeting house; and a curiously carved and pannelled oak pulpit, imported from England, was set up.



## 1717.

Two great storms, on the twentieth and twenty-fourth of February, covered the ground so deep with snow, that people for some days could not pass from one house to another. Old Indians, of an hundred years, said that their fathers had never told them of such a snow. It was from ten to twenty feet deep, and generally covered the lower story of the houses. Cottages of one story were entirely buried, so that the people dug paths from one house to another, under the snow. Soon after, a slight rain fell, and the frost crusted the snow; and then the people went out of their chamber windows, and walked over it. Many of the farmers lost their sheep; and most of the sheep and swine which were saved, lived from one to two weeks without food. One man had some hens buried near his barn, which were dug out alive eleven days after. During this snow, a great number of deer came from the woods for food, and were followed by the wolves, which killed many of them. Others were killed by the people with guns. Some of the deer fled to Nahant, and being chased by the wolves, leaped into the sea, and were drowned. Great damage was done to the orchards, by the snow freezing to the branches, and splitting the trees as it fell. This snow formed a remarkable era in New England; and old people, in relating an event, would say that it happened so many years before or after the great snow.

The town tax this year was £237. Mr. Shepard's salary was eighty-seven pounds; and the rest was for the school, and other town debts.

---

1718.

In the beginning of this year, Mr Shepard was unwell; and a gentleman, whose name was Townsend, was employed to preach five sermons; for which the town paid him fifty shillings. The Selectmen, on the fifth of March, were directed to employ a schoolmaster; and in their agreement with him, "to have relation to some help for Mr Shepard in preaching."

According to tradition—which may not very safely be relied on in matters of importance, though it may assist in delineating manners and customs, it was about this time that potatoes were first introduced into Lynn. Mr John Newhall received two or three, which he planted; and when he gathered the produce,

a few of them were roasted and eaten, merely from curiosity ; and the rest were put into the shell of a gourd, and hung up in the cellar. The next year he planted them all, and had enough to fill a two bushel basket. He knew not what to do with so many, and gave some of them to his neighbors. Soon after, one of them said to him ; " Well, I have found that potatoes are good for something. I had some of them boiled, and ate them with fish, and they relished very well." It was several years after this, before potatoes came into general use, and then only in small quantities. A farmer, who kept a very particular account of every day's employment, first mentions " patatas," as a common article, in 1733.

At this time, tea was little used, and teakettles were unknown. The water was boiled in a skellet ; and when the ladies went to visiting parties, each one carried her teacup, saucer, and spoon. The teacups were of the best china, and very small, containing about as much as a common wine glass.

---

### 1719.

The northern lights were first observed this year, on the seventeenth of December. The people were much alarmed at their appearance. The northern hemisphere seemed to be on fire ; and it is said that the coruscations were distinctly heard, like the rustling of a silken banner.

---

### 1720.

Whoever has attentively read the lives of the early ministers of New England, as written by the Rev. Cotton Mather, must have observed, that they are represented to have been men of uncommon learning, piety, and worth. This may be imputed partly to the embellishments of his pen, and partly to the fact, that they were born and educated in the bosom of the Church, and in the best Universities of Europe. We are greatly indebted to Mr. Mather for his account of these ministers ; but we should have been far more grateful to him, if he had been more particular with regard to dates and facts respecting the subjects of his biography, instead of devoting so much time and space to remarks on the worthies of Greece and Rome ; for we could

easily have presumed his acquaintance with ancient history and the classics, without so ostentatious a display of it. The Rev. Stephen Batchelor he did not notice; and the sketch, in the first part of this work, is the first particular account of him that has been given. Since that was written, I have ascertained that he died at Hackney, in England, at the age of about one hundred years. In his life of Mr. Cobbett, he has given us but one date with certainty—the rest have been supplied by laborious research. It is now my province to introduce some account of one of the early ministers of Lynn, who died this year, and of whom no particular biography has before been written. Throughout the whole of this work, it is my endeavor to present facts, dates, and original extracts, illustrative of circumstance or character; and not to embellish by fine wrought description, or to bestow virtues where they were not possessed.

The Rev. Jeremiah Shepard was the fourth son of the Rev. Thomas Shepard, minister of Cambridge; who came from Towcester, in England, in 1635. His mother, who was his father's third wife, was Margaret Boradile. He was born at Cambridge, on the eleventh of August, 1648; and graduated at Harvard College in 1669. He was the first minister of Lynn, who was born and educated in America. His brother Thomas was minister of Charlestown, and his brother Samuel minister of Rowley. In 1675, he preached as a candidate at Rowley, after the death of his brother; and in 1678, at Ipswich. He came to Lynn in 1679, during the sickness of Mr. Whiting; and was ordained on the sixth of October, 1680.—He was admitted a freeman in the same year. He resided, at first, in the street which has been called by his name; and afterward built a house, which was burnt down, on the north side of the Common, a little distance eastward from the old Anchor Tavern. In 1689, he was chosen representative to the general court; and this is perhaps the only instance in the early history of New England, in which a minister of the gospel sustained that office. He died on the third<sup>1</sup> of June, 1720, aged seventy-two; having preached at Lynn forty years.

The life of Mr. Shepard was distinguished by his unvaried piety. He was one of those plain and honest men, who adorn their station by spotless purity of character; and has left a name to which no one can annex an anecdote of mirth, and

which no one attempts to sully by a breath of evil. He was indefatigable in his exertions for the spiritual welfare of his people ; but his dark and melancholy views of human nature tended greatly to contract the circle of his usefulness. It is the practice of many who attempt to direct us in the way of truth, that, instead of laying open to us the inexhaustable stores of happiness, which the treasury of the Gospel affords—in- stead of drawing aside the veil which conceals from man's dark- ened heart the inexpressible joys of the angelic world, and in- ducing us to follow the path of virtue, from pure affection to Him who first loved us—they give unlimited scope to the wild- est imaginations that ever traversed the brain of a human be- ing, and plunge into the unfathomable abyss of superstition's darkness, to torture the minds of the living by stirring up the torments of the dead, and driving us to the service of God, by unmingled fear of his exterminating wrath. It is not requisite for the prevalence of truth, that we should be forever familiar with the shadows that encompass it. The mind may dwell upon darkness until it has itself become dark, and callous to improvement—or reckless, and despairing of good. That Mr. Shepard's views of human nature, and of the dispensation of the Gospel, were of the darkest kind, is evident from the ser- mons which he has left ; and these opinions unfortunately led him to regard the greater part of the christian world as out of the way of salvation, and to look upon the crushed remnant of the red men as little better than the wild beasts of the forest.— In alluding to the mortality, which prevailed among the Indians in 1733, he says that, "The Lord swept away thousands of those salvage tawnies, those cursed devil worshippers."

His writings exhibit occasional gleams of genius and beauty ; but they are disfigured by frequent quotations from the dead languages, and by expressions inconsistent with that nobleness of sentiment, and purity of style, which should be sedulously cul- tivated by the young. It was the custom in his time, to pro- long the sermon at least one hour, and some times it was exten- ded to two ; and a sand glass was placed on the pulpit to measure the time. In one of his sermons he alludes to this practice. "Thou art restless till the tiresome glass be run out, and the tedious sermon be ended." He published the following works.

1. "A sort of Believers never saved." Boston, 1711, 12 mo.
2. "Early Preparations for Evil Days." Boston, 1712, 24 mo.
3. "General Election Sermon." Boston, 1715, 12 mo.

The following epitaph was transcribed from his grave stone with much difficulty; having become nearly obliterated by the dilapidations of more than one hundred years.

“Elijah’s mantle drops, the prophet dies,  
His earthly mansion quits, and mounts the skies.  
————— So Shepard’s gone.  
His precious dust, death’s prey, indeed is here,  
But’s nobler breath ’mong seraphs does appear;  
He joins the adoring crowds about the throne,  
He’s conquered all, and now he wears the crown.”

The name of Mr. Shepard’s wife was Mary. She died 28 March, 1710, aged 53 years. He had nine children, 1. Hannah, born 1676, married John Downing of Boston, 1698. 2. Jereniah born 1677, died 1700. 3. Mehetabel, died 1688. 4. Nathaniel, born 16 June, 1681, removed to Boston. 5. Margaret, died 1683. 6. Thomas, born 1 August, 1687, died 1709. 7. Francis, died 1692. 8. John, married Alice Tucker, 1722. 9. Mehetabel second, married Rev. James Allin of Brookline, 1717.

Mr. Nathaniel Henchman, who had been invited, in February, to settle as a colleague with Mr. Shepard, was ordained minister of the first parish in December. His salary was £115; and he received £160, as a settlement. Twenty persons, “called Quakers,” were exempted, some entirely and others in part from the payment of parish taxes.

Mr. Nathaniel Sparhawk was ordained minister of the second parish, now Lynnfield, on the seventeenth of August.<sup>1</sup> His salary was seventy pounds.

Mr. John Lewis was master of the Grammar School. The school was kept in four places; on the Common, at Wood End, in the west parish, and in the north parish.

---

## 1721.

The general Court, of the preceding year, ordered fifty thousand pounds to be emitted in bills of credit. Of this, Lynn received £124, 4, as its proportion, which was loaned at five per cent. This money, which was afterward called Old Tenor, soon began to depreciate; and in 1750, forty five shillings were estimated at one dollar.

---

1. Lynnfield Records.

The small pox prevailed in New England. In Boston more than eight hundred persons died. If the small pox of 1633 was a judgement upon the Indians, for their erroneous worship, was not this equally a judgement upon the inhabitants of Boston? Some men are very free in dealing out the judgements of God to their enemies, while they contrive to escape from the consequence of their own reasoning. If a misfortune comes upon one who differs from their opinions, it is the vengeance of heaven; but when the same misfortune becomes their own, it is only a trial. One might suppose that the observation of Solomon, that "all things happen alike to all men," and that still more pertinent remark of our Saviour, respecting the tower of Siloam, would teach men understanding. But though he spoke so plainly, how many do not rightly understand the doctrine of that inimitable Teacher.

Doctor John Henry Burchsted died on the twentieth of September, aged 64 years. He was born in Germany in 1657, and came to Lynn about the year 1685. He married widow Mary Kertland, and had a son, Dr. Henry Burchsted, born 3 October, 1690. He resided in Essex Street, on the same spot where the house of Dr. Richard Hazeltine now stands. The following is his epitaph.

"Silesia to New England sent this man,  
To do their all that any healer can;  
But he who conquered all diseases must  
Find one who throws him down into the dust.  
A chemist near to an adeptist come,  
Leaves here, thrown by, his caput mortuum.  
Reader, physicians die as others do;  
Prepare, for thou to this art hastening too."

The Honorable John Burrill died of the small pox, on the tenth of December, aged 63 years. He was born on the fifteenth of October, 1658, and lived on the western side of Willis's Hill. He married Mary Stowers of Chelsea, on the twenty eighth of July, 1680, and left no children. He was Town Clerk for thirty years, and was twenty one times elected Representative. He was Speaker of the House for several years, and at the time of his death was a Counsellor. He gained a reputation which few men, who have since filled his stations, have surpassed. The purity of his character, and the integrity of his life, secured to him the warmest friendship of his acquaintance, and the unlimited confidence of his native town. He was affable in his maners, and uniformly prudent in his conduct. His

disposition was of the most charitable kind, and his spirit regulated by the most guarded temperance. He willingly continued in the House many years, when he might have been raised to a more elevated office ; and his thorough acquaintance with the forms of legislation, the dignity of his deportment, and the order which he maintained in debate, gave to him a respect and an influence, which probably no other Speaker of the House ever obtained. Governor Hutchinson, in his History of Massachusetts, compares him to the celebrated William Pitt, Speaker of the English House of Commons. His death was lamented as the death of no inhabitant of Lynn has since been lamented ; and his name is treasured in the hearts of the people, as one of the brightest ornaments of the town. The following epitaph is on his grave stone.

“ Alas ! our patron’s dead ! The country—court—  
The church—in tears, all echo the report ;  
Grieved that no piety, no mastering sense,  
No counsel, gravity, no eloquence,  
No generous temper, gravitating to  
Those honors, which they did upon him throw,  
Could stay his fate, or their dear Burrill save  
From a contagious sickness, and the grave.  
The adjacent towns this loss reluctant bear,  
But widowed Lynn sustains the greatest share ;  
Yet joys in being guardian of his dust,  
Until the Resurrection of the Just.”

---

## 1722.

Between the years 1698 and 1722, there were killed in Lynn woods, and on Nahant, four hundred and twenty eight foxes ; for most of which the town paid two shillings each. In 1720, the town voted to pay no more for killing them, and the number since this time is unrecorded. We have also no account of the immense multitude which were killed during the first seventy years of the town. If these animals were as plenty in the neighborhood of Zorah, as they were at Lynn, Sampson probably had little difficulty in obtaining his alleged number.

## 1726.

A ship yard was open at Lynn, where the wharves have since been built, near Liberty Square. Between this year and 1741, two brigs and sixteen schooners were built.<sup>1</sup> It is said, that before the first schooner was launched, a great number of men and boys were employed, with pails, in filling her with water, to ascertain if she was tight. As this story rests only on tradition, I do not vouch for its correctness.

---

## 1727.

An earthquake happened on the twenty ninth of October, about twenty minutes before eleven, in the evening. The noise was like the roaring of a chimney on fire, the sea was violently agitated, and the stone walls and chimneys were thrown down.

The town, on the twenty second of November, fixed the prices of grain ; wheat at 6 s. barley and rye at 5 s. Indian corn at 3 s. and oats at 1 s. 6 d. a bushel.

---

## 1728.

The general court having, the preceeding year, issued sixty thousand pounds more, in bills of credit, the town received £130, 4, as its proportion, which was loaned at four per cent.

A school house was built in Loughton's lane, now Franklin Street.

---

## 1729.

A great snow storm happened on the fifteenth of February, during which there was much thunder and lightning.

The general court was held in Salem, on the twenty eighth of May, in consequence of the measles at Boston.

At the request of the first parish, Hr. Henchman relinquished his salary of £115, and trusting entirely to the generosity of the

---



people for his support ; in his own words, “ depending on what encouragement hath been given me, of the parish doing what may be handsome for the future.” At the end of the year, the contribution amounted to £143, 1, 4.

---

### 1730.

On Sunday evening, April twelfth, there was an earthquake.<sup>1</sup>

On Monday, August twenty fourth, “ Governor Jonathan Belcher went through Lynn, and the people paid their respects to him in an extraordinary manner.”<sup>1</sup>

On the thirty first, Mr. Andrew Mansfield was killed in a well, at Lynnfield, by a stone falling on his head.<sup>1</sup>

On the twenty second of October, the northern lights appeared very brilliant and awful, flashing up in red streams.<sup>1</sup>

---

### 1731.

The Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk was dismissed from the pastoral charge of the north parish, now Lynnfield, on the first of July, having preached eleven years. He was a son of Mr. Nathaniel Sparhawk of Cambridge. He was born in 1694, and graduated at Harvard College in 1715. He was ordained on the seventeenth of August, 1720 ; and died on the seventh of May, 1732 ; about one year after his separation from that church. A part of his people had become dissatisfied with him, and some, whom he considered as his friends, advised him to ask a dismission, in order to produce tranquillity. He asked a dismission, and it was unexpectedly granted. A committee was then chosen to wait on him, and receive the church records ; but he refused to deliver them. Soon after, he took to his bed, and is supposed to have died in consequence of his disappointment. I have sixteen papers of his hand writing, being the confessions of faith of his wife and other members of his church. He married Elizabeth Perkins, who died 12 May, 1768, aged 68 years. He had four children. 1. Elizabeth, born 28 December, 1721. 2. Nathaniel, born 24 September, 1725, died 11 December, 1728. 3. Edward Perkins Sparhawk, born 10 July, 1728, and graduated at Harvard College in 1753. He married Mehetabel Putnam, 1759, who died 8

September, 1778. He was never ordained, though he preached many times in the parishes of Essex. I have twenty six of his manuscript sermons, and seventeen interleaved almanacs. He appears not to have approved the settlement of Mr. Adams as minister of the parish for which he was a candidate, and calls him "old Adams, the reputed teacher of Lynnfield." He is the first person whom I found in our records, having three names. The custom of giving an intermediate name seems not to have been common, till more than one hundred years after the settlement of New England. 4. John, born 24 October, 1730, was apprenticed as a shoemaker, and afterward became a physician in Philadelphia.

Mr. Stephen Chase, of Newbury, was ordained minister of the second parish, on the twenty fourth of November. His salary was one hundred pounds.

On the third of August, the school house was removed from Franklin street to Water Hill.<sup>1</sup>

---

### 1732.

On the fifth of September, there was an earthquake without noise<sup>1</sup> In October, an epidemic cold affected most of the people in Lynn. It ranged through America, and passed to Europe

---

### 1733.

A settlement was begun at Amherst, in New Hampshire, by people from Lynn.

A memorandum respecting the town meeting, on the fifth of March, says; "At this meeting we had a great debate and strife, so that the town was much in a hubbub."<sup>1</sup>

---

### 1736.

The first meeting house in the third parish, now Saugus, was built this year.

---

<sup>1</sup> Collins's Journal.

**1737.**

On Sunday, February sixth, there was an earthquake.<sup>1</sup>

At this time, there were fourteen chaises, nine vehicles called chairs, and one colash, owned in Lynn.

The roof of the first parish meeting house was altered, and the windows changed from lead to wooden sashes.

Square toed shoes went out of fashion this year, and buckles began to be used.

---

**1738.**

On the thirty first of March, two houses were burnt ; one of which belonged to Mr. Edmund Lewis, and the other to Mr. John Hawkes.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Richard Mower was schoolmaster.

---

**1739.**

On the third of March, Mr. Theophilus Burrill's barn was burnt.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Edward Cheever was ordained minister of the third parish, on Wednesday, the fifth of December.

Mr. Edmund Lewis, and Mr. Ralph Lindsey, were chosen by the town, to enforce an act of the general court, to prevent the destruction of deer.

---

**1740.**

The Rev. George Whitefield came to New-England, and preached in many towns.

A fatal disease, called the throat distemper, prevailed in Lynn, and many fell victims to it. In October, six children died in one week.<sup>1</sup>

In a great snow storm, on the seventeenth of December, a schooner was wrecked on Nahant rocks.<sup>1</sup>

The winter was exceedingly cold, with many storms. The rivers were frozen in October. Snow began to fall on Thanksgiving day, November thirteenth, and on the fourth of April following, it covered the fences.<sup>1</sup>

---

## 1741.

A difference had existed, for several years, between Mr. Henchman and his parish, in consequence of their refusal to make so large an addition as he desired to his salary, on which he declined to accept it. This year he offered to preach lectures to them gratuitously, for which he received their thanks, and an increase of his salary.<sup>1</sup>

Great commotions were excited in the neighbouring towns, by Mr. Whitefield's preaching. In some places, meetings were held almost every evening; and exhortations and prayers were offered by women and children, which had never before been done in New England.<sup>2</sup>

On the eighteenth of February, the Winnesinet ferry boat was upset, and a Frenchman drowned.<sup>2</sup>

## 1742.

An evening meeting of the followers of Mr. Whitefield, on the eleventh of March, is thus noticed. "This evening sundry young persons were struck, as they call it, in the religious manner. This is the first of so in our town."<sup>2</sup>

On the eighteenth of June, Mr. Nathaniel Collins's house was struck by lightning.<sup>2</sup>

On the twelfth of October, Mr. Jonathan Norwood fell from a fishing boat, near Nahant, and was taken up dead. On the thirteenth of July, 1643, Mr. Moses Norwood, of Lynn, was drowned at Boston.

## 1744.

On Sunday morning, June third, there was an earthquake, sufficiently violent to throw down stone wall. It was repeated on the twentieth.<sup>2</sup>

On the fourteenth, a small company of men were impressed, to be sent, with other troops from Massachusetts, against the French and Indians, who were making depredations on the northern frontier. The town was furnished with a stock of powder, which was stored in a closet, beneath the pulpit of the first parish meeting house.

---

1 Parish Records.

2 Collins's Journal.

On the thirty first of December, Mr. Theophilus Merriam was found dead on the ice, on Saugus river.

---

### 1745.

On the evening of March ninth, there was a night arch.

The Rev. George Whitefield came to Lynn, on the third of July, and requested Mr. Henchman's permission to preach in his meeting house, which was refused. Some of the people resolved that he should have liberty to preach; and taking the great doors from Mr. Theophilus Hallowell's barn, and placing them upon some barrels, they made a stage, on the eastern part of the Common, from which he delivered his address. He had in the preceeding year, visited Lynn, and received a denial of the same request. After the first application and refusal, Mr. Henchman addressed a letter, in a printed pamphlet, to the Rev. Stephen Chase of Lynnfield, containing reasons for declining to admit Mr. Whitefield into his pulpit. Some of these reasons were, that Mr. Whitefield had disregarded and violated the most solemn vow, which he took when he received orders in the Church of England, and pledged himself to advocate and maintain her discipline and doctrine—that he had intruded into places where regular churches were established—that he used vain boasting, and theatrical gestures, to gain applause—that he countenanced screaming, trances, and epileptic fallings—that he had defamed the character of Bishop Tillotson, and slandered the colleges of New England. To this letter, Mr. William Hobby, minister of Reading, made a reply; and Mr. Henchman rejoined in a second letter. The controversy extended throughout New England, and many pamphlets were written, both for and against Mr. Whitefield. Some good seems to have been done by him, in awakening the people to a higher sense of the importance of piety; but seeking only to awaken them, and not to direct them to the Church, of which he was a minister, they were left to form new separations, and to build up other faiths.

---

### 1746.

On the eighteenth of August, the corn was hurt by a frost.

A packet schooner, commanded by Captain Hugh Allen, passed from Lynn to Boston. It continued to sail for many years.

## 1747.

The Rev. Edward Cheever relinquished his connexion with the second parish, of which he had been minister for eight years. He was a son of Mr. Thomas Cheever, of Lynn, and was born 2 May, 1717. He graduated at Harvard College in 1737, and was ordained in 1739. He removed to Eastham, where he died, 24 August, 1794, aged 77 years.

---

## 1749.

The drought of this summer was probably never exceeded in New England. The preceding year had been unusually dry, but this was excessively so. There was but little rain from the sixth of May to the sixth of July. A memorandum in the eighteenth of July, says; "Extreme hot dry weather, such as has not been known in the memory of man—so scorched that the creatures can but just live for the want of grass."<sup>1</sup> The effects of the drought were so great, that hay was imported from England. Immense multitudes of grasshoppers appeared. They were so plenty on Nahant, that the inhabitants walked together, with bushes in their hands, and drove them by thousands into the sea.

---

## 1750.

John Adam Deageor, a shoemaker, from England, came to Lynn. He was one of the best workmen for ladies' shoes who had ever appeared in the town. At the time of his arrival, the business of shoemaking at Lynn was very limited, and the workmen unskillful. There were but three men who conducted the business so extensively as to employ journeymen. These were, John Mansfield, Benjamin Newhall, and William Gray, grandfather of William Gray, Lieutenant Governor of Massachusetts. The workmen had frequently obtained good shoes from England, and taken them to pieces, to discover how they were made. By the instruction of Mr. Deageor, they were soon enabled to produce shoes nearly equal to the best

---

1. Collins.

imported from England. Shoemakers, from all parts of the town, went to him for information; and he is called, in the Boston Gazette of 1764, "the celebrated shoemaker of Essex." He resided in that part of the town called Mansfield's End. He married Susannah Newhall, in 1761; and had three children; Caroline, Sarah, and Joseph. He served in the war of the revolution, and was a steady, capable, and industrious man. But like many who have consulted the public interest more than their own, he was poor, and died in the Lynn Alms House, in 1808.

---

### 1752.

Mr. Joseph Roby was ordained minister of the third parish, now Saugus, in August.

The school house was removed from Water Hill, to its former place in Franklin street, on the twenty ninth of September; and on the twenty seventh of November, it was again removed to the eastern part of the common.<sup>1</sup>

The Selectmen were allowed two shillings a day for their services. Dr. Nathaniel Henchman was schoolmaster.

---

### 1755.

A shop on the Common, belonging to Mr. Benjamin James, was burnt, on the fourth of February.<sup>2</sup> On the twenty fourth, a schooner, from Salem, was cast away on Little Beach, at Nahant.<sup>1</sup>

On Sunday, April twenty seventh, the Society of Friends, for the first time, had two meetings in one day.<sup>1</sup>

The Rev. Stephen Chase resigned the care of the second parish, now Lynnfield. He graduated at Harvard University, in 1728; and was ordained 24 November, 1731. He married Jane Winget of Hampton, in 1732; and his children, born at Lynn, were, Abraham, Stephen, Jane, Stephen second, and Mary. He removed to Newcastle, in New Hampshire, where he settled and died.

Mr. Benjamin Adams was ordained minister of the second parish, on the fifth of November.

The greatest earthquake ever known in New England, happened on Tuesday, the eighteenth of November, at fifteen

---

1 Collins.

2. Pratt

minutes after four, in the morning. It continued about four minutes. Walls and chimnies were thrown down, and clocks stopped. On the same day Lisbon was destroyed. On the following Saturday there was another earthquake.<sup>1</sup>

A whale, seventy five feet in length, was landed on King's Beach, on the ninth of December. Dr. Henry Burchsted rode into his mouth, in a chair drawn by a horse; and afterward had two of his bones set up for gate posts, at his house in Essex street, where they stood for more than fifty years.

---

### 1756.

At this time there lived in Lynn a singular person, whose name was Jonathan Gowing. At the age of twenty seven he suddenly became deranged, and continued so for three weeks, during which time he was confined. Before this, he had been remarkable only for his stupidity and indolence, being extremely careful to do nothing which should be of the least service to any one. He was now suddenly metamorphosed into the most sprightly and active disposition, full of vivacity, quickness of apprehension, and liveliness of imagination, to a degree which seemed almost miraculous. He performed a great variety of the most singular and amusing tricks, without injury; and the sallies of his wit and humor were such as to astonish every one. He was visited by all classes of people, from the illiterate laborer to the man of science, and all were delighted by the keenness of his perception; and completely foiled in any attempts to surpass him in the exercise of wit and humor.

There was at the same time a man in Reading whose name was Joseph Emerson, celebrated for his wit, who valued himself very highly for the possession of this talent, and took great pains to excel in it. Having heard of Jonathan's surprising ability, he determined to put it to the test; and a day was appointed, when the parties were to meet at the tavern in Saugus, for the exercise of their facetious powers. Public notice was given, and so large a number of people assembled, that there was not room for them in the house. Preparation was therefore made in an adjacent field, and managers were appointed to regulate the crowd and preserve order. The rival wits commenced with some pleasant ceremony and compliment, and as the conversation proceeded, they became face-



tious and witty at each other's expense. After a little time, the champion from Reading gained the ascendancy, and retained it so long, that the company were generally persuaded that Jonathan would not be able to extricate himself. During all this time however, the Lynn wit manifested the most perfect indifference, and seemed to be utterly careless of the result. Presently he gave a sudden change to the conversation, and made every thing that the other said turn against him. A person who was present says, that the exercise of his wit was "beyond all human imagination." His opponent, who was regarded as the archest fellow in the province, was completely confounded; and so great was his chagrin and disappointment, says a physician who was present, that he immediately fell into faintings, like one in the agonies of death, and refused all the anodynes which were offered him.<sup>1</sup> As for Jonathan, he was perfectly indifferent of his success, and praise or dispraise were alike to him. He retained his facility of wit for several months, and then relapsed into his former indolence; and such was the stupidity of his disposition, that it became proverbial, and when any one was slow of apprehension, the expression was—you are as dull as Jonathan Gowing.

---

### 1757.

There was an earthquake on the eighth of July, at fifteen minutes after two of the clock.<sup>2</sup>

On the afternoon of Sunday, August fourteenth, the people were alarmed, during meeting time, by the beating of drums; and on the next day, twenty men were impressed, and marched to Springfield.<sup>3</sup>

---

### 1758.

A company of soldiers, from Lynn, marched for Canada, on the twenty third of May.

In a thunder shower, in the fourth of August, an ox, belonging to Mr. Henry Silsbe, was killed by the lightning.

A sloop from Lynn, commanded by Captain Ralph Lindsey, was cast away, on the fifteenth of August, near Portsmouth.

## 1761.

The Honorable Ebenezer Burrell was born on the thirteenth of July, 1679. He was representative from Lynn six years; and in 1731, and 1746, was chosen counsellor. He was sent a commissioner to Casco Bay, to treat with the Indians, on the seventeenth of July, 1732; and returned on the fifth of August. He lived at Swampscot, at the place where Mr. Humphrey formerly resided; and died on the sixth of September, 1761, aged 82 years. He married Martha Farrington, by whom he had ten children. 1. Ebenezer, Esquire, born 6 February, 1702; died 20 May, 1778, aged 76 years. He was town clerk 17 years, and representative 12 years. He had eleven children; one of whom, James, born 11 March 1744, removed to Providence; whose son, Honorable James, LL.D. a graduate of Brown University in 1788, and a senator in Congress, died at Washington city, in 1820, aged 46 years. 2. John, 3. Martha. 4. Theophilus, Esquire, born 21 May, 1709. 5. Mary. 6. Eunice. 7. Lois. 8. Samuel, born 1 April. 1717, was five times representative of Lynn. 9. Sarah. 10. Lydia.

The Rev. Nathaniel Henchman was a son of Mr Nathaniel Henchman, a book binder, and deacon of a church in Boston. He was born<sup>1</sup> on the twenty second of November, 1700; and graduated at Harvard University in 1717. He was ordained minister of the first parish in Lynn, in December, 1720.—His residence was on the north side of the Common, where he built the house now owned by Mr. George Bracket. He died<sup>2</sup> on the twenty third of December, 1761, aged 61; having preached forty one years. In the early part of his ministry, Mr. Henchman enjoyed the esteem and confidence of his people. His learning was extensive, and his integrity and virtue entitled him to high respect. He was strongly attached to regularity and order, and disinclined to every species of enthusiasm. He thought the services of the Sabbath, in general, were sufficient, and was decidedly opposed to evening meetings. By his omitting to deliver lectures, and refusing to admit itinerant preachers into his pulpit, disaffections were created, which deprived him of the regard of many of his peo-

---

<sup>1</sup> Lynn Record, in the hand writing of Dr. Nathaniel Henchman, Town Clerk.

<sup>2</sup> "About one or two o'clock, in the morning." Collins.

ple. The occasion of these difficulties is to be imputed to the opinions of the time, rather than to any want of urbanity on the part of Mr. HENCHMAN, who was very affable in his manners, and treated Mr. Whitefield with great civility and respect in his own house, and invited him to remain longer.<sup>1</sup> He published the following pamphlets.

1. Reasons for declining to admit Mr. Whitefield into his pulpit; addressed to the Rev. Stephen Chase of Lynnfield. Boston, 1744, 8vo.

2. A letter to Rev. William Hobby of Reading, in reply to his vindication of Mr. Whitefield. Boston, 1745, 4to.

The following epitaph was written for Mr. HENCHMAN.

Three times aloud the summons hath been blown,  
To call Lynn's watchmen to the highest throne.  
First Whiting left the church her loss to weep;  
Then Shepard next resigned his peaceful sheep;  
Our other shepherd now gives up his trust,  
And leaves his charge to slumber in the dust.  
A few fleet years, and the last trump will sound,  
To call our HENCHMAN from the silent ground.<sup>2</sup>  
Then we who wake, and they who sleep must come,  
To hear the Judge pronounce the righteous doom.

Mr. HENCHMAN had two wives; 1. Deborah Waker, in 1727, and 2. Lydia Lewis, in 1734. He had five children. 1. Dr. Nathaniel, born 1 April 1728, graduated at Harvard University in 1747, was town clerk of Lynn for two years, and died 30 May, 1767, aged 39. His son, Dr. Nathaniel, born 4 May 1762, removed to Amherst in New Hampshire, and died 27 May, 1800, aged 38. His son, Dr. Nathaniel, the fifth and last of that name, was born at Amherst, in 1786, and died at Woodville, Mississippi, 5 September, 1819, aged 33. 2. Daniel, born 23 November, 1730, removed to Boston. 3. Anna. 4. Lydia. 5. Anna second.

On the twelfth of March, at twenty minutes after two, in the morning, there was an earthquake; and on the first of November, between eight and nine in the evening, another.<sup>3</sup>

## 1762.

The summer of this year was remarkably dry. On Wednesday, the twenty eighth of July, a day of fasting and prayer was

1 Whitefield's Journal—Dr. Wigglesworth's Letter.

2 The word henchman signifies a warder or watchman.

3 Collins.

observed, in consequence of the drought ; and on the Sunday following, there was “ a fine shower of rain.”<sup>1</sup>

---

### 1763.

Mr. John Treadwell was ordained minister of the first parish, on the second of March.

---

### 1765.

This year an act was passed, by the Parliament of England, called the Stamp Act ; requiring the people of the American Colonies to employ papers stamped with the royal seal, in all mercantile and legal transactions. This act called forth a general spirit of opposition, particularly in Boston ; where, on the night of the twenty sixth of August, a party of the people collected, and nearly demolished the house of Lieutenant Governor Hutchinson, and several others. In many other places the people manifested their displeasure, by tolling bells, and burning the effigies of the stamp officers.

Mr. William Perkins was born on the eighteenth of February, 1738, and graduated at Harvard University in 1758. He was schoolmaster, in the first parish, for several years ; and died on the ninth of October, 1765, aged 27. He was much admired and respected for his uncommon abilities, extensive acquirements, and unaffected manners.

---

### 1766.

On Saturday, the eighth of February, an English brig, from Hull, was cast away on Pond Beach, on the south side of Nahant.

This year the stamp act was repealed. The people of Lynn manifested their joy by ringing the bell and making bonfires. On the first of December, they directed their representative, Ebenezer Burrill, Esquire, to use his endeavors to procure an act to compensate Mr. Hutchinson, and others, for their losses in the riot of the preceding year.

---

## 1768.

On the seventh of November, Mr. John Wellman and Mr. Young Flint, were drowned in Chelsea river, and their bodies taken up the next day.

A Catamount was killed by Mr. Joseph Williams, in the Lynn woods.

---

## 1769.

A snow storm, on the eleventh of May, continued twelve hours.

On Wednesday evening, July nineteenth, a beautiful night arch appeared. It was widest in the zenith, and terminated in a point, at each horizon. The color was a brilliant white, and it continued most of the evening.

On the eighth of August, as a party were going on board a schooner in the harbor, for a sail of pleasure, the canoe, in which were six women and two men, was upset, and two of the party drowned. These were Anna Hood, aged 23, daughter of Mr. Benjamin Hood; and Alice Basset, aged 17 years, daughter of Mr. Daniel Bassett.

In a great snow storm on the eighth of September, several buildings were blown down, and a sloop driven ashore at Nahant.

---

## 1770.

After the repeal of the stamp act, the English Parliament, in 1767, passed an act imposing duties on imported paper, glass, paints, and tea. This again awakened the opposition of the colonies. The General Court of Massachusetts, in 1768, published a letter, expressing their firm loyalty to the king, and their unwillingness to submit to any acts of legislative oppression. This letter displeased the English government, the General Court was dissolved, and seven armed vessels, with soldiers, were sent from Halifax to Boston, to ensure tranquillity. On the fifth of March, 1776, a part of these troops, being assaulted by some of the people of Boston, fired upon them, and killed four men. The soldiers were imprisoned, tried, and acquitted.

On the twelfth of April, the duties on paper, glass, and paints, were repealed; but the duty on tea, which was three pence on a pound, remained. On the twenty fourth of May, the inhabitants of Lynn held a meeting, in which they passed the following resolutions.

“ 1. Voted, we will do our endeavor to discountenance the use of foreign tea.

2. Voted, no person to sustain any office of profit, that will not comply with the above vote.

3. Voted, no taverner or retailer shall be returned to sessions, that will not assist in discountenancing the use of said tea; and the selectmen to give it as a reason to the sessions.

4. Voted, unanimously, that we will use our endeavors to promote our own manufactures amongst us.”

The disaffection against the English government, appears to have been occasioned, not so much by the amount of the duty on the tea, as by the right which it implied in that government, to tax the people of America without their consent. The colonies had always admitted their allegiance to the English crown; but as they had no voice in parliament, it was ungenerous, if not unjust, in that parliament, to impose any taxes which were not necessary for their immediate benefit.

A great storm, on the nineteenth of October, raised the tide higher than had been known for many years

---

### 1771.

On the ninth of January, Mrs. Rebecca Hadley, wife of Mr. Thomas Hadley, of Lynnfield, left her house to visit an acquaintance, and did not return. On the twenty sixth she was found, drowned in the stream above the mill pond, into which she probably fell, in attempting to cross it.

---

### 1772.

Mr. Sparhawk, of Lynnfield, in his diary thus remarks. “An amazing quantity of snow fell in the month of March, such as I never knew in the time that I have lived.” On the fifth of March, the amount of snow which fell, was 16 inches;

on the ninth, 9 inches ; on the eleventh, 8 inches ; on the thirteenth, 7 inches ; on the sixteenth, 4 inches ; and on the twentieth, 15 inches. Thus the whole amount of snow in sixteen days, was nearly five feet, on a level.

On the fifteenth of May, Abigail Rhodes, a daughter of Mr. Eleazer Rhodes, was lost. On the twenty fourth, a great number of people went in search of her, in vain. On the second of June, another general search was made ; and on the twenty first of July, her bones were found, in a swamp in Lynn woods.

Dr. Jonathan Norwood kept the town school. He was a son of Mr. Zacheus Norwood, and was born on the nineteenth of September, 1751. He graduated at Harvard University, in 1771, and lived on the north side of the Common.

---

### 1773.

The opposition to the duty on tea continued unremitted. The East India Company sent many cargoes to America, offering to sell it at a reduced price ; but the people resolved that it should not be landed. Seventeen men, dressed like Indians, went on board the vessels in Boston harbor, broke open 342 chests of tea, and poured their contents into the water.

A town meeting was held at Lynn, on the sixteenth of December, in which the following resolutions were passed.

“ 1. That the people of the British American Colonies, by their constitution of government, have a right to freedom, and an exemption from every degree of oppression and slavery.

2. That it is an essential right of freemen to have the disposal of their own property, and not to be taxed by any power over which they have no control.

3. That the parliamentary duty laid upon tea landed in America, is, in fact, a tax upon Americans, without their consent.

4. That the late act of parliament, allowing the East India Company to send their tea to America on their own account, was artfully framed, for the purpose of enforcing and carrying into effect the oppressive act of Parliament, imposing a duty upon teas imported into America ; and is a fresh proof of the settled and determined designs of the ministers to deprive us of liberty, and reduce us to slavery.

5. That we highly disapprove of the landing and selling of

such teas in America, and will not suffer any teas, subjected to a parliamentary duty, to be landed or sold in this town; and that we stand ready to assist our brethren of Boston, or elsewhere, whenever our aid shall be required, in repelling all attempts to land or sell any teas poisoned with a duty."<sup>1</sup>

A deer was this year started in the Malden woods, and chased, by some hunters, through Chelsea, to the Lynn marsh. He plunged into the Saugus river, and attempted to gain the opposite shore; but some Lynn people, coming down the river in a boat, approached; and throwing a rope over his horns, brought him ashore at High Point.

---

### 1774.

The destruction of the tea at Boston gave great offence to the English government, and an act was passed, by which the harbor of Boston was closed against the entrance or departure of any vessels. The inhabitants of Lynn held several meetings, in which they expressed their disapprobation of the shutting of the port of Boston, and their abhorrence of every species of tyranny and oppression.

On the seventh of October, a congress of delegates from the several towns of Massachusetts, assembled at Salem, to consider the state of public affairs. The delegates from Lynn were Ebenezer Burrill Esquire, and Captain John Mansfield. On the fourteenth, they adjourned to Cambridge. They made addresses to Governor Gage, and to the clergy of the province, chose a committee of safety, and recommended measures for the regulation of public conduct.

This year the northern lights cast a luminous night arch, of a milk white hue, across the heavens, from the east to the western horizon. Another night arch appeared in 1775; and in 1776, another.<sup>2</sup>

---

### 1775.

On the morning of Wednesday, the nineteenth of April, the inhabitants of Lynn were awakened, by the information that a detachment, of about eight hundred troops, had left Boston, in the night, and were proceeding towards Concord. And who

---

1 Town Records.

2 Perkins's Ms.



were the men, thus marching at midnight, through the peaceful villages of New England, startling the slumbers of unsuspecting innocence? Men from the land of Shakspeare and Pope, of Clarendon and Howard; men from the land of genius and refinement; a land whose pride, for ages, has been her free spirit, and her principles of civil liberty. Had England understood her true interests, she would have said to the men whom she sought to subjugate; Americans, your fathers were subjects of our king, and you have sprung from our blood. But you have now become a great people, and you are too remote for our legislation. We wish not to control your energies; be free. We seek not your tribute, we ask not your homage. We wish only to convince you, that your fathers erred in abandoning the salutary discipline of the Church, in which they were educated. We wish to convince you that the Church is the fountain of life, the purest in practice, and the noblest in sentiment, of all the communities of men, because her doctrines are from God. We wish you to be persuaded that you will find no certain repose to your minds, no

“Calm, sheltered haven of eternal rest,”

until your numerous sects shall return to the common fold. Go, then, build up a nation on the purest principles of civil and religious liberty, speaking the same language, and maintaining the same faith, until that language and that faith shall become universal. Was this her language? No. Influenced by ignorant and designing counsellors, by men who possessed not the true spirit of Englishmen, she sent her armies three thousand miles across the Atlantic, to march, in the silence of midnight, to the accomplishment of their dark designs.

On receiving the intelligence that the troops had left Boston, many of the inhabitants of Lynn immediately set out, without waiting to be organized, and with such weapons as they could most readily procure. One man, with whom I was acquainted, had no other equipments, than a long fowling piece, without a bayonet, a horn of powder, and a seal skin pouch, filled with bullets and buck shot. The English troops arrived at Lexington, a little before five in the morning, where they fired upon the inhabitants, assembled in arms before the meeting house, and killed eight men. They then proceeded to Concord, where they destroyed some military stores; but being opposed by the militia, they soon began to retreat. The people from Lynn met them at Lexington, on their return; and joined in firing at them from the walls and fences. In one

instance, says my informant, an English soldier, coming out of a house, was met by the owner. They levelled their pieces at each other, and firing at the same instant, both fell dead. The English had sixty five men killed, the Americans fifty. Among these were four men from Lynn, who fell in Lexington.

1. Mr. William Flint. He married Sarah Larrabee, 5 June, 1770.

2. Mr. Thomas Hadley. His wife is mentioned in 1771.

3. Mr. Daniel Townsend. He was born 26 December, 1738. A stone has been erected to his memory, at Lynnfield, with the following inscription.

“ Lie, valiant Townsend, in the peaceful shades, we trust,  
Immortal honors mingle with thy dust.  
What though thy body struggle in its gore ?  
So did thy Saviour's body long before ;  
And as he raised his own, by power divine,  
So the same power shall also quicken thine,  
And in eternal glory mayst thou shine.”

4. Mr. Abednego Ramsdell. He was a son of Noah Ramsdell, and was born 11 September, 1750. He had two brothers, older than himself, whose names were Shadrach and Meshech. He married Hannah Woodbury, 11 March, 1774, and resided in the eastern part of Essex street. He had gone out early on that morning to the sea shore, with his gun, and had killed a couple of black ducks, and was returning with them, when he heard the alarm. He immediately threw down the birds, and set off. He was seen passing through the town, running in haste, with his stockings fallen over his shoes. He arrived at Lexington about the middle of the day, and fell immediately.

In the number of the wounded were, Mr. Joshua Felt, and Mr. Timothy Munroe; the latter of whom had thirty two bullet holes shot through his clothes. Mr. Josiah Breed was taken prisoner, and carried to New York; but was afterward released.

The war was now begun in earnest. On the twenty third of April, the people of Lynn chose a committee of safety, to consult measures of defence. This committee consisted of the Rev. John Treadwell, minister of the first parish, the Rev. Joseph Roby, minister of the third parish, and Deacon Daniel Mansfield. A company of alarm men was organized, under the command of Lieutenant Harris Chadwell. Three watches

were stationed each night; one at Sagamore Hill, one at the south end of Shepard street, and one at Newhall's Landing, on Saugus river. No person was allowed to go out of the town, without permission; and the people carried their arms to the place of public worship. Mr. Treadwell, always foremost in patriotic proceedings, appeared, on the Sabbath, with his cartridge box under one arm, and his sermon under the other; and went into the pulpit with his musket loaded.

On the seventeenth of June, was fought the memorable battle of Bunker Hill. The Lynn regiment was commanded by Colonel John Mansfield. It consisted of four companies, under Captains William Farrington, Rufus Mansfield, Daniel Parker, and Nathaniel Bancroft. This regiment arrived in Charlestown at an early hour, and was ordered to reinforce the troops already engaged. But Colonel Mansfield, receiving secondary orders from Major Gridley, marched his regiment to Cobble Hill, to cover the field pieces; in consequence of which, the soldiers from Lynn were not actively engaged. The English, in this battle, lost two hundred and twenty six men killed, and the Americans, one hundred and thirty nine.

Mr. John Lewis died this year, aged ninety two. He lived on the place of his ancestors, in Boston street, and was for many years a deacon of the first parish. He owned the second tannery in Lynn, which was on the brook opposite his house. He was a gentleman extensively beloved and respected. He married Mary Burrill in 1715, and had five children. 1. Lydia, who married Rev. Nathaniel Henchman, in 1734. 2. Sarah. 3. Mary, who married Rev. John Carnes, in 1747. 4. Lois. 5. John, who was born 7 November, 1724; graduated at Harvard University, in 1744; and died 21 October 1754.

---

## 1776.

In January, the English troops were quartered at Boston, and the American at Cambridge, separated by Charles river. It was the intention of General Putnam to cross over to Boston, as soon as the river should become sufficiently frozen. Three of his soldiers, one of whom was Mr. Henry Hallowell of Lynn, hearing of this design, set out to try the strength of the ice, by throwing a large stone before them. A party of about fifty of the English soldiers, on the opposite shore, commenced firing at them; which they only regarded by mocking with their voices the noise of the bullets. They continued on the ice till

the English party retired; when, thinking that they had gone to procure a cannon, they returned, after picking up more than seventy balls on the ice, which they presented to General Putnam, as trophies of their venturesome exploit. The soldiers from Lynn were under the command of Captain Ezra Newhall.

On the twenty first of May, the people of Lynn voted, that the ministers should be invited to attend the annual town meetings, to begin them with prayer. I was once at the meeting of a town, in New Hampshire, in which this practice prevails, and was convinced of its propriety. There are occasions, on which prayer is made, which are of less apparent importance, than the choice of men, to govern the town or commonwealth, and to make laws, on which the welfare, and perhaps the lives of the people may depend.

A company of soldiers was furnished for an expedition to Canada. On the second of August, the town allowed them fifteen pounds each, and voted that ten pounds should be given to any person who would voluntarily enlist.

An alarm was made, at midnight, that some of the English troops had landed on King's beach. In a short time the town was all in commotion. Many person left their houses and fled into the woods. Some families threw their plate into the wells and several sick persons were removed. Some self possession, was however manifested. Mr. Frederick Breed, for his exertions in rallying the soldiers and marching them to Wood End, where he found the alarm to be false, received a commission in the army, and afterward rose to the rank of Colonel.

For the following anecdotes, I am chiefly indebted to Mr. Henry Hallowell, who was in the army several years.

'When the troops were on Dorchester heights, many hogsheads of sands were prepared, and placed in readiness to be rolled down, to break the ranks of the English, if they should attempt to ascend.

'While a part of the American army was stationed in Fort Washington, at New York, General Washington's barge, by a stratagem, passed all the English vessels in the harbor and came up toward the fort. A party of the American soldiers was ordered to fire upon her, and just as they were about to obey, Captain Knox's artillery, from the fort, threw a cannon ball on board of her, and killed several men.

'The engineer, who built Fort Washington, was a Frenchman. He had a negro, to whom he entrusted his concerns,

and one day the plan of the fort was missing. The negro was suspected to have taken it, and General Washington ordered him to have ten lashes a day till he confessed. He was laid upon his face, with his hands and feet extended and fastened to four stakes, and whipped for many days, but made no confession; and soon after the fort was taken by the English. Several Lynn men were among the prisoners.

‘At Trenton, says Mr. Hallowell, I was taken sick with a fever, and carried to Philadelphia, where I found many sick. Ralph Lindsey, David Newman, and Ephraim Twist, of Lynn, died. Twenty five persons were buried in one day.’

---

### 1777.

The Rev. Benjamin Adams was born at Newbury, in the year 1719, and graduated at Harvard University in 1738. He was ordained minister of the second parish, now Lynnfield, on the fifth of November 1755; and died on the fourth of May, 1777, aged 58; having preached 21 years. He married Rebecca Nichols, and had seven children, 1. Rebecca. 2. Dr. Benjamin Adams, born 7 September, 1758; died 16 January 1811, aged 53. 3. Elizabeth. 4. Sarah. 5. Ann. 6, Joseph, and 7, Nathan, twins, born 11 April, 1769.

‘While I was with part of the army at Worcester, says Mr. Hallowell, our Lieutenant Colonel, Farrington, was broken for making paper money, and Major Ezra Newhall, of Lynn, was appointed in his place. Captain Allen was appointed Major. He was afterward killed, at Northampton, while on a hunting party, by one of his neighbors, who mistook him for a deer.

‘At the north, the English appeared very powerful, and had many wild Indians to keep in their front, who harassed us by killing our men. After the Americans had taken Fort Stanwix, about three hundred Indians came and joined our army, under General Gates. About one half of the English army was composed of Indians and hired German soldiers.

‘I was at the house, says Mr. Hallowell, where the celebrated Jane Mac Crea resided, and saw her while alive. Her lover, who was in the English army, sent for her, and offered a small party of Indians a quantity of rum, to convey her to him in safety. Some other Indians heard of it, and determined to obtain the reward; to prevent which, the first party of Indians killed her. On the same day, a lieutenant and several soldiers

were killed by the Indians, and were buried in the woods ; but Jane was brought to the American camp, and buried, in great respect, with the honors of war.

‘Many barbarities were committed by the Indians of both parties. The enemy Indians fired into one house, and killed a mother and five children. They also killed Colonel Alden at Cherry Valley, and another of our officers, while he was drinking at a spring. Our Indians, one day, took an enemy Indian and brought him into camp. As they passed along, they were amusing themselves by sticking pins into his face.

‘The southern men had two bad quarrels with the northern men, so that we had to turn out a large party to quell them. Captain Shays, who afterward rose against our state government, belonged to our regiment, and was considered a good officer then.

‘One day a soldier went to sleep on his blanket, and a large rattlesnake came and took a place with him. Some soldiers killed the snake, before they waked the man.

‘A battle was fought at Saratoga, on the nineteenth of September, and a bloody time it was. In the midst of it, our men broke their ranks, and began to plunder the dead. Colonel Newhall determined, in case of another battle, to shoot the first man who should do the like again. The soldiers, generally, would rather go to battle, than to hear preaching.

‘On the seventh of October, another battle was fought ; and after a great slaughter, the English retreated. On entering their works, we found a German soldier still on sentry. He asked for quarter, but our adjutant ordered him to be shot. In the pursuit, we took a captain and fifty men, with much equipage ; among which was General Burgoyne’s marquee, which fell to the lot of Colonel Newhall. In their retreat, they set fire to a village, which was burning on our approach. They then fortified themselves on a hill, at some distance ; but our army being soon reinforced, General Burgoyne surrendered on the seventeenth.’

In the winter of this year, Mr. John Lewis, aged 26, and Benjamin Lewis, aged 15, brothers, of Lynn, died on board the Jersey prison ship, in the harbor of New York. Their deaths were principally occasioned by severe treatment, and unwholesome food, prepared in copper vessels.

## 1780.

The town of Lynn granted as much money as would purchase twenty seven hundred silver dollars, to pay the soldiers. Within two years, the town granted seventy thousand pounds, old tenor, to defray their expenses. The principal money in circulation was the paper money issued by Congress, which had greatly depreciated. A soldier of the revolution says, that in 1781, he sold seventeen hundred and eighty dollars, of paper money, for thirty dollars in silver.

The continental currency, as it was called, consisted of small pieces of paper, about two inches square. The two dollar bills bore a hand, making a circle with compasses, with the motto, *tribulatio dital*, trouble enriches. The device of the three dollar bills was an eagle, pouncing upon a crane, who was biting the eagle's neck, with the motto, *exitus in dubio*, the event is doubtful. On the five dollar bills was a hand, grasping a thornbush, with the inscription, *sustine vel abstine*, hold fast or touch not. The six dollar bills represented a beaver felling a tree, with the word *perseverando*, by perseverance we prosper. Another emission bore an anchor, with the words, "*In te Domine speramus*," In thee, Lord, have I trusted. The eight dollar bills displayed a harp, with the motto, *majora minoribus consonant*, united we stand. The Thirty dollar bills exhibited a wreath on an altar, with the legend, *si recte, facies*, if you do right, you will succeed. I remember that, when I was a child, I had thousands of dollars, of this uncurrent money, given me to play with.

The nineteenth of May was remarkable throughout New-England for its uncommon darkness. It began about the hour of ten in the morning. At eleven, the darkness was so great, that the fowls retired to their roosts, and the cattle collected round the barns, as at night. Before twelve, candles became requisite, and many of the people of Lynn omitted their dinners, thinking that the day of judgement had come. The darkness increased through the evening, and continued till midnight. It was supposed, by some, to have been occasioned by a smoke, arising from extensive fires in the western woods, and combining with a thick fog and clouds from the sea. They who look to higher causes, see the operations of God in all the changes of nature. "Clouds and darkness are round about Him, who walketh on the wings of the wind."

## 1782.

The Rev. John Treadwell relinquished the care of the first parish. He was born at Ipswich, 20 September, 1738, and graduated at Harvard University in 1758. He was ordained on the second of March, 1763, and preached at Lynn nineteen years. He resided in the house on the corner of Boston and Hart streets, next to the Lewis place. On leaving Lynn, he returned to Ipswich; and in 1787, removed to Salem; where he died, on the fifth of January, 1811, aged 73 years. He was a representative from the towns of Ipswich and Salem, a senator of Essex county, and a judge of the court of common pleas. He married Mehetable Dexter, in 1763; and had one daughter, who married a Cleaveland; and one son, John Dexter Treadwell, born at Lynn, 29 May, 1768, graduated at Harvard University in 1786, a respected physician at Salem.

---

1783.

This year, the war, which had spread its gloom through the colonies for more than seven years, was finally terminated, by a treaty of peace, signed on the third of September; and the thirteen United States took their rank, as a free and independent nation.

It is to be regretted, that there was not then—that there is not even *now*, generosity enough in the nation to admit the slaves to participate in the benefits of freedom. The declaration of American independence, published in 1776, maintains that “all men” are endowed with the unalienable right of “liberty;” yet a large portion of the subjects of our government are violently deprived of its enjoyment. The constitution of Massachusetts promulgated in 1780, asserts that “all men are born free;” and with a spirit worthy of that assertion, all men in this Commonwealth are made free. At the commencement of the war, there were more than forty slaves in Lynn; all of whom were set at liberty before the close of this year. Most of the wealthy farmers had one in each of their families; and when they married their children were slaves. There was a slave in Lynn, in 1675, named Domingo Wight, who had a wife and two children. Another slave, in 1714, named Simon Africanus, had a wife and six children. Mr. Zacheus Collins had four slaves, whose names were Pharaoh, Essex, Prince, and Cato. Prince



was purchased at Boston, in 1746, for £170, old tenor; about seventy five dollars. In 1757, he married a negro girl, belonging to Mr. Zacheus Gould, whose name was Venus. Mr Joshua Cheever had a slave, named Gift, whom he freed in 1756, on the solicitation of his wife; who made it a condition of the marriage covenant, that their slave should be free at the age of 25. John Bassett had a slave, named Sampson, whom he liberated in 1776; because "all nations were made of one blood." Thomas Cheever had two slaves, Reading and Jane, who were married in 1760. Samuel Johnson had a slave, named Adam, who married Dinah in 1766.

There was a slave at Lynn, called Pompey, who obtained his freedom about the year 1750, and lived on Saugus river. He had been a king in Africa, and as such he was regarded by his people in this country. Every year, during his life, the slaves, not only of Lynn, but of Boston, Salem, and the neighboring towns, obtained leave of their masters, for one day, to visit King Pompey. This, to them, was a day of real happiness. Far from the eye of their masters, they collected on a little glade by the river side, and fancied themselves, for a few short hours, on the banks of the Gamba. Each youth on his way gathered wreaths, and each maiden flowers, of which they formed a crown to place on the head of their acknowledged prince. The old men talked of the happy days they had seen in their native land, and called to mind the wives and the children of their earlier years; while the youths and the maidens wandered along the river side, or strayed through the forest, and exchanged smiles, and formed dreams of happiness, which the future did not fulfil.

Hannibal, a slave belonging to Mr. John Lewis, was an example of the good effects which education and proper treatment might produce in the black people. He was brought from Guinea when a boy, and was treated rather as a servant than a slave. On arriving at manhood, he married Phebe, a slave belonging to Mr. Eben Hawkes. To encourage him in his labor, each day's work was limited, and he was told that all which he earned by extra labor, should be his own. He applied himself to his work with diligence; and by swingling flax, and performing other service for his neighbors, he earned sufficient to purchase the freedom of three children, at one hundred pounds, old tenor, each. The purchase of his wife was a more difficult task. Phebe was a faithful slave, and Mr. Hawkes was unwilling to part with her service; he therefore

fixed the price of her freedom at forty pounds, lawful money. But Hannibal, with a motive of hope before him, was not to be discouraged, and in a few years he could call her his own. His own freedom was then restored to him. By further industry, a piece of land was purchased, on the south side of Pine Hill, where a house was built, which the family found to be a home of peace. Hannibal was appointed sexton of the first parish, and the duties of that office he faithfully performed for many years. He possessed a strong mind, and was much respected for his honesty, integrity, and morality. He used to remark that "negro's skin is black, but his heart is white." He married in 1762, and died on the twenty first of December, 1803, aged about 70 years. His sons were, Bristol, Adam, and Hannibal; and his daughters, Billiah, Moriah, Phebe, Ann, Hannah, and Catharine. Hannibal, born 26 October, 1787, received a good town school education, and was an industrious and respectable young man. He married at Boston, removed to St. Domingo, and is now an officer in the government of Hayti.

Mr. Joseph Mottey was ordained minister of the north parish, in the twenty fourth of September.

On the twenty ninth of November there was an earthquake.

---

## 1783.

A manuscript, written about this time, by Dr. John Perkins, of Lynn, is preserved in the hall of the Antiquarian Society at Worcester. It is a quarto volume, of 368 pages. He says that he was born at Lynn End, now Lynnfield, on the ninth of March, 1698. At the age of twelve he was put to a grammar school; two years after which his father died. At the age of sixteen he began to study physie, and at twenty, went to reside with Dr. William Davis of Boston. He afterward practised at Topsfield, then at York, in the district of Maine, where he disliked, and returned to Lynnfield in 1720. In 1728, he removed to Boston, and in 1732 went to London, where he remained two years. He then returned to Boston, where he successfully continued the practice of physie for forty years, till the commencement of the war, when he again returned to his native place. In 1755 he published a tract on the causes of earthquakes. He was the first physician who practised the cooling regimen, in cases of small pox, in America; and he wrote an essay on this subject, which was published in the

London Magazine. His memoir contains many observations on epidemical and other diseases, and many pages against the doctrines of the materialists. His wife, Clarissa, died in 1749, and he wrote a poem on her death. He also versified the 127 and 148 Psalms, at the request of the Rev. Joshua Moodey of York.

---

### 1784.

The Rev. Obadiah Parsons was installed pastor of the first parish, on the fourth of February.

On the twenty eighth of October, General La Fayette passed through the town, on a visit to the eastward. He stopped at Newhall's tavern, in Saugus.

---

### 1786.

In April, Mr. Benjamin Ingalls, while throwing an anchor from a boat in the harbor was drawn overboard, and drowned.

The first rock split in Lynn, was opened this year, by John and Elijah Gore. Before this, the people selected the most regular unwrought stones for building.

On the ninth of December, there was a very great snow storm. The snow was supposed to be about seven feet deep, on a level.<sup>1</sup>

---

### 1789.

General Washington passed through Lynn, in October. The inhabitants were greatly delighted to see him, and the principal road, now Boston street, was lined with people, who came forth to look at him, as he proceeded to Salem.

---

### 1790.

Mr. Jesse Lee, an English Methodist, came to Lynn, and preached at a private house, on the fourteenth of December. This was the beginning of the first Methodist Society in this place.

---

1. Sparhawk's Journal.

The eighteenth of December was the coldest day known for many years. The thermometer was twenty degrees below zero.

---

### 1792.

The Rev. Obadiah Parsons relinquished his connexion with the first parish, on the sixteenth of July. He was born at Gloucester, received a degree at Harvard University in 1768, and on the fourth of February, 1784, was installed at Lynn, where he preached eight years. He returned to Gloucester, where he died in December 1801. His first wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Edward Wigglesworth of Danvers; his second wife was Sally, daughter of the Hon. Peter Coffin of Gloucester. He had nine children, whose names were, Elizabeth Wigglesworth, William, Sally Coffin, William second, Sally Coffin second, Obadiah, Polly, Harriet, and Sally.

On the tenth of August, Mr Joshua Howard, aged 29 years, went into the water, after laboring hard upon the salt marsh, and was immediately chilled and drowned.

---

### 1793.

A boat, containing five persons, was upset, near the mouth of Saugus river, on the fourteenth of December, and three persons drowned. These were Mr. John Burrill, aged 67, Mr. William Whittemore, aged 17, and William Crow, aged 15 years. They had been on an excursion of pleasure to the Pines, the afternoon was pleasant, and just at the close of it they started for home. They had proceeded but a short distance when they were struck by a squall, which frightened them and caused them to seek the shore, which they would probably have regained, had they been more quiet; but being impatient, one of them jumped upon the side of the boat, which caused it to be upset, and they were all turned into the water. Two of them swam to the shore in safety. Mr. Burrill and the boy also gained the beach, but died in a few minutes. The body of Mr. Whittemore was not found till the next day.

## 1794.

Mr. Thomas Cushing Thacher was ordained minister of the first parish, on the thirteenth of August.

A new school-house was built by a few individuals and purchased by the town. It is now the property of the sixth district. The town granted two hundred pounds for the support of schools.

In the prospect of a war with France, the government of the United States required an army of eighty thousand men to be in preparation. Seventy five men were detached from the militia at Lynn. The town gave each of them twenty three shillings, and voted to increase their wages to twelve dollars a month.

On the nineteenth of October, David Newman, aged three years, a son of Mr. Eli Newman, was drowned.

## 1795.

On the night of the ninth of December, the Scottish brig, *Peggy*, Captain John Williamson, from Archibat, Cape Breton, was cast away on the western end of the Long Beach. There were twelve men on board, only one of whom escaped. This was Hugh Cameron, a native of Greenock, in Scotland. He was ordered into the long boat, to make fast the tackle, and at the moment of his entering it, a wave separated it from the vessel, and swept his unfortunate comrades from their last hold on life. The names of those who perished were, John Williamson Captain, Robert Smith mate, John Munson, George Mackenzie, Alexander Lamont, Robert Mackellar, Peter Black, Archibald King, John MacReeber, and James MacBride, mariners, and Mr Thomas Banon, passenger. The vessel was loaded with thirty five hundred quintals of dried fish, consigned to Mr. Thomas Amory, of Boston. The vessel was completely wrecked, being dashed by the waves upon the hard sand, until scarcely two planks were left in union. The cargo, and the fragments of the wreck, were scattered in melancholy and promiscuous ruin along the Beach, and the eastern shore of Little Nahant, interspersed with the bodies of the unfortunate crew; and many teams were employed, for several days, in transporting them to the town. The bodies of the eight first mentioned

persons were found on the Beach ; and, on the eleventh, they were conveyed to the first parish meeting house, where an affecting sermon was preached, by the Reverend Thomas Cushing Thacher, from Job 1, 19. During the delivery of the discourse Mr. Cameron stood in the centre aisle, where he was addressed in the following words.

“ You, my distressed brother, exhibit a principal character in this tragedy. I would not add to your already oppressed bosom ; I would rather administer the balm of comfort, the consolations of friendship and sympathy. Of this awful event, you alone are “ escaped to tell us.” You see before you the lifeless corpses of your worthy commander, and those of your comrades in toil and distress. You see that, though perfect strangers, we participate your sorrows and wish to alleviate them. How great, how singular the providence, that from twelve men, you alone are spared. You now stand before God and this great assembly, in his temple. What then will you render unto God, for all his benefits ? By a continuance of the smiles of Providence, you may now expect again to behold your friends and connexions. You will be the melancholy messenger of melancholy news. Perhaps I may never see you more ; certainly I do not expect again thus publicly to address you. Let me then most affectionately exhort you, by the solemnities of a dying hour, as you value your own soul, and by a regard to that Providence which has preserved you, to repent of all your sins, and to turn unto the Lord Jesus Christ, on whose merits alone are founded our hopes of pardon, grace, and glory. The Lord bless you ; the God of Abraham of Isaac and Jacob bless you, my brother.”

The bodies of the eight drowned men were then buried in one grave, in the old burying ground. The body of Mr. John MacReeber was afterward found, and deposited beside them.

---

### 1798.

On the twenty sixth of July, Abigail Witt, a child of Mr. Daniel R Witt, was drowned.

On the twenty fifth of August, as several persons were sailing in a boat, in Saugus river, a gun was accidentally discharged, and Amos Ballard, aged eleven years, a son of Mr. John Ballard, was instantly killed.

In the prospect of a war with the French government, the

people of Lynn sent the following address to President Adams.

"To His Excellency John Adams, President of the United States of America

"At a period which so seriously arrests the attention of every American and true friend to his country as the present, the inhabitants of Lynn, in the state of Massachusetts, feel it to be their duty, and impressed with the just, wise, and prudent administration of the executive and the rulers in general of the American republic, ardently embrace an opportunity to announce their determined resolution to support their constitution of government, with all they hold most sacred and dear ; convinced, as we are, that the President has, by fair, unequivocal, and full instructions, which he has given to our envoys, to adjust, and amicably accommodate all existing difficulties between the United States and the French Republic, done all, consistent with the honor, dignity, and freedom of his country, to preserve peace and good understanding with that nation. Notwithstanding our envoys are commissioned with full power to settle all amnesties with the French agents upon the broad basis of equality, they are treated with neglect, and refused an audience, lest their reasonings should show to the world the integrity of our government, and disclose their iniquity. Legislators, Guardians, the most nefarious designs have been plotted to subvert our government, subjugate our country, and lay us under contribution. But thanks be to the Sovereign of the Universe, that we do not experience the fate of Venice, nor groan under the oppression of subdued nations. We are a free people, and have a sense of the blessings which we enjoy under that liberty and independence which we have wrested from the hand of one king, and will not supinely submit to any nation. We wish not to behold our fields crimsoned with human blood, and fervently pray God to avert the calamities of war. Nevertheless, should our magistrates, in whom we place entire confidence, find it expedient to take energetic measures to defend our coasts, we will readily co-operate with them in every such measure. Nor do we hesitate, at this interesting crisis, to echo the declaration of our illustrious chief, that "we are not humbled under a colonial sense of fear ; we are not a divided people. Our arms are strong in defence of our rights, and we are determined to repel our foe."

To this address the President made the following reply.

To the Inhabitants of Lynn, in the state of Massachusetts.

“Gentlemen, your address to the President, Senate, and House of Representatives, adopted at a legal town meeting, has been handed to me by your representative in Congress, Mr. Sewell. When the inhabitants of one of our towns, assembled in legal form, solemnly declare themselves impressed, with the wise, just, and prudent administration of our rulers in general, and that they will support their constitution and government, with all they hold most sacred and dear, no man, who knows them, will question their sincerity. The conviction you avow, that the President has done all, consistent with the honor, dignity, and freedom of his country, to preserve peace and good understanding with the French, is a gratification to me, which I receive with esteem. As the treatment of our envoys is without a possibility of justification, excuse, or apology, I leave it to your just resentment. Your acknowledgment of the blessings you enjoy, under your liberty and independence, and determination never supinely to surrender them, prove you to deserve them.

JOHN ADAMS.”

---

### 1799.

On the second of August, about noon, a barn, belonging to Mr. Micajah Newhall, on the South side of the Common, was struck by lightning and burnt, with a quantity of hay, barley, and one of his oxen.

---

### 1800.

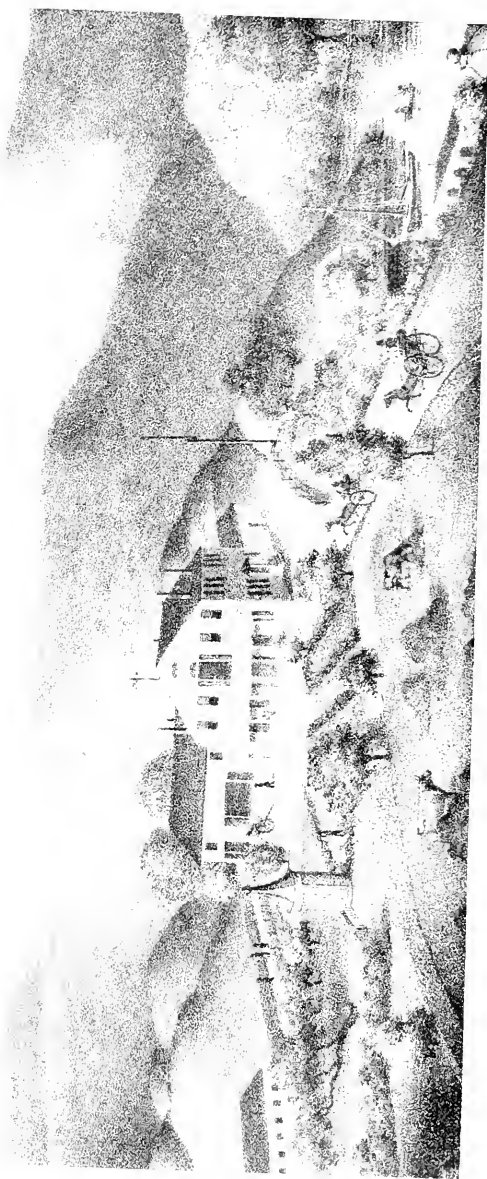
On the seventh of January, a funeral sermon was preached before the Methodist Society, by Mr. William Guirey, on the death of General George Washington, who died on the fourteenth of December, in the preceding year.

On the thirteenth of January, a funeral procession was formed, in honor of the departed Washington. The Inhabitants assembled at the school house, on the western part of the Common. The scholars walked first, with pieces of crape on their arms, followed by a company of militia with muffled drums, the municipal officers, and citizens. The procession proceeded to the first parish meeting house where a chaste and classic eulogy was pronounced by the Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher.

On Sunday afternoon, March first, there was an earthquake.







For more than twenty years from the adoption of the state constitution in 1780, the people of Lynn do not appear to have been much agitated by any conflict of political opinions. The insurrection in the central counties of Massachusetts in 1786, was the first event which disturbed the public peace; and in the following year, some of the inhabitants, among whom was the father of the writer, went voluntarily to suppress the rebellion. The administration of the national government, from its commencement in 1789, seems to have been generally approved till 1794, when a treaty of amity was concluded with England, by John Jay, Chief Justice of the United States, with the sanction of President Washington. This treaty served to evince the existence of two great parties throughout the Union, who were separated by their different views of the nature and extent of republican government. One of these parties, denominated Federalists, contended that the president, with the consent of two thirds of the senate, had a constitutional right, in the most extensive sense, to make foreign alliances, on terms the most favorable to the public welfare. The other party, styled Democrats, considered this power to be so restricted, as not to infringe the particular rights of any state. Both these parties were republican in their general views, and were undoubtedly influenced by the purest regard to the general good, though they were reciprocally viewed as being hostile to it. The course of political events brought other occasions of difference, and in a few years the tide of party feeling rolled over the land like a flood.

In 1781, all the votes given in the town, which were forty-four, were for John Hancock, the first governor under the new constitution. The smallest number was in 1784, when there were only twenty-seven votes for governor, and six for senators. The spirit of party began to be more plainly manifested in 1800, when there were one hundred and thirteen votes for Caleb Strong, the Federal governor, and sixty-eight for Elbridge Gerry, the Democratic candidate. The political excitement however appears to have been very small, and conducted altogether without animosity. There was but one list of senators brought forward till 1801, and the Federalists retained the ascendancy till 1804.

Among the inhabitants of Lynn who deserve an honorable memorial was Dr. John Flagg. He was a son of the Rev. Ebenezer Flagg, minister of Chester in New Hampshire. He

was born in 1743, and graduated at Harvard University in 1761. He studied medicine under the direction of Dr. Osgood of Andover, and commenced practice at Woburn. In 1769 he came to Lynn, where his prudence and skill soon secured to him the esteem and confidence of the people. In the dangerous period which succeeded the commencement of hostilities with England, he was chosen a member of the committee of safety, and received a commission of lieutenant colonel, which he soon resigned, that he might devote himself exclusively to the duties of his profession. In 1782 he was elected a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, at a time when the number of its fellows was restricted to seventy in the whole commonwealth. He also received a commission of justice of the peace, which he continued to hold till the time of his death. He was highly esteemed for his temperance, humanity, and benevolence, as well as for his extensive and successful practice as a physician. He bowed to death, "whose triumphs he had so often delayed and repelled," on the twenty-seventh of May, 1793, aged 50 years. He married Susannah Fowle of Woburn, who is yet living, at the age of 82; and had one daughter, Susannah, who was married to Dr. James Gardner, 28 February, 1793, and died 3 February, 1806.

On the eleventh of June, Mr. Samuel Dyer, a gentleman from Boston, was drowned in Humfrey's pond, in Lynnfield.

On the twenty-sixth of July, Mr. Nathaniel Fuller, aged 38 years, was drowned from a fishing boat, near Nahant.

The sufferings of several persons from Lynn, who were shipwrecked this year, are worthy of notice. Three men, whose names were John Newhall, James Parrott, and Bassett Breed, in the employment of William Gray Esquire, of Salem, entered the ship William Henry, which sailed for Europe, with a valuable cargo of sugar and coffee, on the twenty-second of April. On the eleventh day of their voyage, during which they had much bad weather, they found themselves about one hundred and fifty leagues to the eastward of Grand Bank. In the middle of the night, when all the crew, except the regular watch on deck, were seeking that repose, which nature denies not to the weary mariner in an hour most rude, they were suddenly awakened by a dreadful crash—and instantly the rushing of water was heard, pouring through the vessel's side, and rippling through the thousand crannies of her hold, and around their births. They sprung from their hammocks, on which

they had lain down without divesting themselves of their clothes, and rushed through the water to the deck. The ship had struck on an island of ice, and was sinking. She had stove in her starboard bow, through which the water was gushing like a brook. With an axe, and with their knives, they cut away the lashings of the longboat, cast it overboard, and the whole crew, which consisted of fifteen persons, leaped into it. In the morning they found themselves in the midst of the ocean, in an open boat, with nothing in view but islands of ice, and endless waves. They had saved nothing from the ship, but a small trunk belonging to the captain, a sail, a fishing line, and the axe with which they had cut away the ropes. They soon discovered an object afloat, which fortunately proved to be the binnacle, containing the compass, which they took up. The weather was foggy, and the sea rolled its waves like mountains, uplifting the boat upon their summits, and then dashing it down into the dark hollows. Night approached, and fatigue brought its short slumbers—and day returned without food, and no vessel appeared for their relief. They found some water which had fallen from the clouds into the hollow of an island of ice, and lay mingled with the salt spray; and this was their principal support. On the fourth day they caught a fish, which some of them devoured without cooking, but others were too faint and sick, from their long fast, to swallow it. The fifth day came, and still they were contending with the turbulent waves, which were marching in ceaseless succession, over the dark plain of the mighty deep, with their white plumes blown backward by the gale. On the sixth day they discovered land, which proved to be a cape on the eastern part of Newfoundland, near Cape Race. They went ashore, found the place uninhabited, and laid down to sleep. On repairing to the beach in the morning, they found their boat stove, and filled with sand and water. They remained on shore three days, during which they subsisted on sea peas, thistles, and cranberries. Several of the crew were so frozen as to be unable to walk, but having repaired their boat, they pushed it off, and were again on the water. After rowing several hours, they discovered a small vessel, containing four men, who would at first afford them no relief, supposing them to be pirates, but after much entreaty, they threw out a rope, and towed them into St. Mary's Bay. From thence they found a passage to St. John's, where they were furnished, by the American consul, with a small vessel, in which they returned home.

The sufferings of these men were however not so intense as those of Mr. James Larrabee of Lynn, and the rest of the crew of the ship *Commerce*. This vessel, which belonged to Boston, was stranded on the coast of Arabia, on the night of the tenth of July, 1792. The crew consisted of twenty white men, thirteen Lascars, and one African. Finding the coast sandy and uninhabited, they put off in three boats, and cruised along the shore. The sea ran so high that they were soon compelled to take the men from the smallest boat, and let her go adrift. On the third day, one of the other boats was overturned, and three men were drowned. The rest were landed, and were plundered by several companies of Bedouins, of almost every article of clothing. Thus exposed, they were compelled to travel for several hundred miles, with scorching sands and rocks beneath their feet, and a burning sun above their heads. For many days they travelled on without food, but sometimes found fish among the rocks, and received water from the wandering Bedouins, whom they occasionally met, or found it in springs, at long intervals. Many of their number were overcome by hunger, thirst, and heat, and falling down one by one upon the sands, were left alone to perish. At length the few who had strength to proceed, met with a company of Arabs, with camels, who agreed to carry them to a town. On the twelfth of August, about five weeks after their shipwreck, they reached Mascat, where the English consul caused them to be clothed and shaved, and paid the Arabs for their conveyance. In a few days Mr. Larrabee left Mascat, and by various passages, in about a year returned to Lynn. The African and the Lascars were never heard of more; and of the twenty white men, only eight were known to have survived.<sup>1</sup> One of them, Mr. Valentine Bagley, is yet living at Amesbury.

On the twenty-first of September died Mrs. Anne Carnes, aged 24 years, wife of Burrill Carnes, Esquire. This lady was the last branch of an ancient and respectable family.<sup>2</sup> Absalom Zeagers, Esquire, her grandfather, was one of the first settlers in Essequibo, now a part of the province of Dutch Guiana, in South America. He was highly distinguished in life, held several respectable offices, and died in 1778. He married Anne Bevin, at Antigua, who died in 1777, distinguished for her piety and benevolence. The Hon. Samuel Zeagers,

---

1 Saunders's Journal.

2 Rev. T. C. Thacher's Sermon.

the father of Mrs. Carnes, was born at Antigua, educated at one of the universities in Holland, became a counsellor and judge in the colony of Essequibo, and died in 1791. Mrs. Carnes received a refined education from a learned instructor, Mr. William Payne, preceptor of Clinton Academy in the state of New York. She was extensively and sincerely beloved, and was remarkable for her pure devotion, the true nobility of her mind, and the possession of those amiable qualities which render the female character most admirable.

Amid the attention which is given to the various concerns of humanity, surely one page may be spared as a tribute to the excellence of woman. In the course of History, the virtues and the worth of man are delineated in all the features of strong and admirable portraiture; but woman—the inspiration of existence, the soul of humanity, without whom the world would be but a resplendent desert, and life itself a burden to its lordly and lonely possessor—Woman is overlooked with indifference, as if she were not entitled even to a small share in the record of human events. When man is consigned to the tomb of his fathers, his worth is recorded on monuments of marble, and his virtues illuminate the page of history; but the grave of woman is passed in silence and neglect. She who is the mother of man, the wife of his bosom, the daughter of his affection—she who has shared all his dangers and encouraged his footsteps up the steep ascent of fame—she who in the hour of sickness has been his comforter, in the day of adversity his support, and in the time of trial his guardian angel—generous, virtuous, unassuming woman—is permitted to go to her everlasting sleep, with no mention of her name, no record of her virtues. Poetry indeed has extolled her, but even poetry has praised her but half. It has represented her chiefly as a thing of beauty, an object of youthful admiration, a creature of light and fancy, full of fascination and the blandishments of love. Poetry and romance follow her in the sunny days of youth and beauty; but when the time of her maturity and usefulness arrives, they abandon her for other pursuits, and leave her alone to encounter the trials, and sickness, and sorrows of home. It is there, in the unobserved paths of domestic life, that the value of woman is to be estimated. There may be found unwavering faith, untiring affection, hope that endures all afflictions, and love that bears all trials. There may be found the smile of unfailling friendship, mantling over a breaking heart—the unob-

trusive tear of sympathy, falling in the silence of solitude. There may be found a being, like a spirit from another world, watching through the long dark hours of night, over the prostrate form of manhood, wasting by slow consuming sickness, and performing all the numerous duties, and encountering all the innumerable trials of common life, with the enduring patience of years, and with no reward but the satisfaction of her own secret heart. Man performs the public toils of life, and participates the honors of the world and the recompense of fame; but woman, who has formed man for his high destiny, and whose virtues and amiable qualities constitute the refinement of society, has no share in such rewards. But history cannot do justice to her merits; she must be satisfied with the living admiration of her excellence on earth, and the everlasting remuneration of her virtues in heaven.

---

### 1801.

On the eighth of October, Theophilus Ingalls, of Lynn, aged 18 years, was killed on board the brig Traveller, at Portsmouth. He was assisting to set up the starboard foretopmast shroud, when the handspike, rigged in the salvage, broke, and he fell backward on the deck, opened his skull, and survived only three hours.

A large meteor appeared in the northwest, on the evening of Friday, October sixteenth. This appears to have been one of the most brilliant meteors ever seen in New England. Its apparent magnitude was more than half the size of the full moon, and the light which it threw out was very great. It passed swiftly to the west.

---

### 1802.

This year a turnpike was projected from Salem to Boston, through the centre of Lynn. On the sixth of March, Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke and others, of Salem, were incorporated as the proprietors.

John Carnes, Esquire, died on the twentieth of October, aged 78 years. He was born at Boston in 1724, and graduated at Harvard University in 1742. He was soon after settled in the



ministry at Stoneham, where he remained several years. He then removed to Rehoboth, where he was installed, and continued to perform the ministerial duties till a short time before the commencement of hostilities with England. He then returned to Boston, where he remained during the occupancy of the town by the English troops, and on his liberation, entered the American army as chaplain. At the close of the war he came to Lynn, where he received a commission of justice of the peace, and was for nine years elected representative to the general court. In 1788, he was a member of the convention assembled to ratify the constitution of the United States. He sustained through life a good reputation, and was esteemed a patriotic and useful citizen. He married Mary, a daughter of Mr. John Lewis; and on coming to Lynn, after the death of her father, fixed his residence at the Lewis place in Boston street. He had several children, two of whom are yet living in Boston; John, the eldest son, and Mary Wadsworth, the youngest daughter.

---

### 1803.

The Rev. Joseph Roby died on the thirty-first of January, aged 79 years. He was born in Boston in 1724, received a degree at Harvard University in 1742, and was ordained a minister of the third parish, now Saugus, in 1752. He was a pious and venerable man, and was highly esteemed for his social and domestic virtues. He was an excellent scholar, and was on terms of intimacy with the most learned ministers of his neighborhood, particularly Dr. Thacher of Malden, Dr. Osgood of Medford, and Dr. Payson of Chelsea, who used frequently to assemble for conversations on theology, literature, and natural philosophy. He was particularly fond of astronomy, and the terms of the abstruse sciences were familiar to him as "household words." On the approach of danger from that war which separated the colonies from their parent stem, he was chosen a member of the committee of safety, and seems to have been strongly imbued with love for his native land. But while he regarded the encroachments of England as a just cause for apprehension and resistance, and made strenuous exertions to strengthen the spirit of independence, he yet viewed that nation, in its civil, religious, literary, and commercial relations, as

entitled to high respect; and on the restoration of peace, was one of the first to advocate an honorable intercourse, on terms of the most generous amity. He published two sermons, both of them on the occasions of a general fast, one in the year 1781, and the other in 1794. He married Rachel Proctor, of Boston, by whom he had seven children; Joseph, Rachel, Mary, Henry, Thomas, the first minister of Otisfield in Maine, Elizabeth and Sarah.

The ship *Federal George*, of Duxbury, sailed from Boston in February, bound to Madeira, with a cargo of flour and corn. In the number of the crew were three men from Lynn, whose names were Bassett Breed, Parker Mudge, and Jonathan Ward. In the midst of the Atlantic they were overtaken by a great storm, which, on the twenty-second, capsized the vessel, carried away her masts and bowsprit, and when it subsided left the deck two feet beneath the water. The crew, which consisted of seven men remained lashed upon the windlass for twenty-four days. Their sustenance, for the first part of the time was a small piece of meat, and a box of candles, which floated up from the hold. They afterward succeeded in obtaining a bag of corn, and some flour soaked with salt water. Their allowance of drink, at first, was a coffee-pot cover full of water twice a day. This was afterward reduced to one half, and then to one third. On the eighteenth of March, they were relieved by the *Duke of Kent*, an English merchant ship, returning from the South Sea. When they were taken from the wreck, they had but one quart of water left.

On Sunday, the eighth of May, a snow storm commenced, and continued about seven hours. The snow was left upon the ground to the depth of one inch. The apple trees were in blossom at the time.

On the eighth of July, Mr. William Cushman, aged 23 years, a workman on the Lynn Hotel, was drowned from a raft of timber, in Saugus river.

On Sunday, the tenth of July, about three of the clock in the afternoon, a house in Boston street, near the corner of Farrington street, was struck by lightning, and Mr. Miles Shory and his wife were instantly killed. The bolt appeared like a large ball of fire. It struck the western chimney, and after descending several feet, separated. One branch melted a watch, which hung over the chamber mantel, passed over the cradle of a sleeping infant, covering it with cinders, and went

out at the north chamber window. The other branch descended with the chimney, and when it reached the chamber floor, separated into two parts, above the heads of the wife and husband, who were passing at that instant from the parlor to the kitchen. One part struck Mrs. Shory on the side of her head, left her stocking on fire, and passed into the ground. The other part entered Mr. Shory's bosom, passed down his side, melted the buckle of his shoe, and went out at one of the front windows. There were four families in the house, which contained, at the time, nineteen persons, several of whom were much stunned. One man, who stood at the eastern door, was crushed to the floor by the pressure of the atmosphere. When the people entered the room in which Mr. Shory and his wife lay, they found two small children endeavoring to awaken their parents. An infant, which Mrs. Shory held in her arms, when she was struck, was found with its hair scorched, and its little finger nails slightly burned, crawling over the breast of its mother, endeavoring to obtain the food of its life from fountains that were sealed. She is yet living, the wife of Mr. Samuel Farrington, in Front street. Mr. Shory was a native of New Hampshire, about twenty-nine years of age. Mrs. Love Shory, aged twenty-eight years, was a daughter of Mr. Allen Breed of Lynn. On the next day they were buried. The coffins were carried side by side, and a double procession of mourners, of a great length, followed the bodies to their burial in one grave.

On the next Sabbath, a funeral sermon was preached by the Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher, at the first congregational meeting house, from Job, chapter xxxvii, verses 2, 3, 4. At the close of the service, a house in Market street, owned by Mr. Richard Pratt, was struck by lightning. It descended the chimney, separated into three branches, did considerable damage to the house, and left Mr. Pratt senseless on the floor, for several minutes.

Within three weeks, ending on the sixteenth of August, twenty-three of the inhabitants of Lynn died.

On Sunday, the twenty-eighth of August, at one o'clock in the morning, the hotel, on the western part of Nahant, owned by Captain Joseph Johnson, took fire, and was consumed, with all its contents. The family were awaked by the crying of a child, which was stifling with the smoke, and had just time to escape with their lives. A black man, who slept in the upper

story, saved himself by throwing a feather bed from the window, and jumping upon it.

On the eighth of September, Mr. John Ballard, Mr. John Pennerson, and his son, went out on a fishing excursion. On the next day the boat came ashore at Nahant, with her sails set, the lines out for fishing, and food ready cooked. Nothing more was ever heard of the crew; but as Mr. Pennerson was a Frenchman, and as a French vessel had been seen that day in the bay, it was conjectured that they were taken on board, and carried to France.

On Thursday, the twenty-second of September, the Salem Turnpike was opened, and began to receive toll. An elegant hotel was this year built in Lynn, by the proprietors of the turnpike, which was begun to be raised on the twenty-eighth of May. The number of shares in this turnpike were twelve hundred, and the original cost was one hundred and eighty-nine thousand dollars. This road will become the property of the Commonwealth, when the proprietors shall have received the whole cost, with twelve per cent. interest; and the bridge over Mystic river, when seventy years shall be accomplished. This turnpike, for nearly four miles, passes over a tract of salt marsh, which is frequently covered by the tide. When it was first projected, many persons esteemed it impracticable to build a good road on such a foundation. One person testified that he had run a pole down to the depth of twenty-five feet. Yet this turnpike proves to be one of the most excellent roads in America, and the stock is the best property of the kind in the Commonwealth.

---

## 1804.

After the elevation of Mr. Jefferson to the presidential chair, the democrats in this town began more ostensibly to increase, and this year, for the first time, manifested a decided superiority. At the choice of governor, in April, 145 votes were given for Caleb Strong, and 272 for James Sullivan; and this year for the first time a democratic representative was chosen. The parties now began to regard each other with manifestations of the most inveterate hostility, and the political arena presented a field of civil warfare without its bloodshed. The most strenuous exertions were made by one party to maintain the ascen-

dency, and by the other to regain it. No man was permitted to remain neuter ; and if any one presuming on his independence, ventured to form an opinion of his own, and to regard both parties as passing the bounds of moderation, he was viewed as an enemy by both ; or if his principles disposed him to unite with one party, he was considered unworthy of all confidence by the other. This rage of party continued for several years, and was so violent in some instances, as to be in danger of degenerating into personal hatred and settled animosity.

This year a powder house was built, near High Rock, at an expense of one hundred and twenty dollars.

On the fourth of August, the body of a woman was found in the canal, on the north side of the turnpike, a short distance west of Saugus bridge. She was ascertained to have been a widow Currier, who was travelling from Boston to Marblehead. The manner of her death was unknown.

Mr. William Frothingham was ordained minister of the second parish, now Saugus, on the twenty-sixth of September. He continued to perform the duties of that office till the year 1817, when he was dismissed on his own request.

One of the greatest storms ever known in New England, commenced on Tuesday morning, the ninth of October. The rain fell fast, accompanied by thunder. At four in the afternoon the wind became furious, and continued with unabated energy, till five the next morning. This was probably the severest storm after that of August 1635. The damage occasioned by it was very great. Buildings were unroofed, barns, chimnies, and fences were blown down, and orchards greatly injured. The chimney of the school house, on the western part of the common, fell through the roof in the night, carrying the bench at which I had been sitting a few hours before, into the cellar. Many vessels were wrecked, and in several towns the steeples of meeting-houses were broken off, and carried to a great distance. The number of the trees uprooted in the woodlands was beyond calculation. Thousands of the oldest and hardiest sons of the forest, which had braved the storms of centuries, were prostrated before it, and the woods throughout were strewed with the trunks of fallen trees, which were not gathered up for many years.

---

## 1805.

For one hundred and seventy-three years, from the building of the first parish meeting-house, the people had annually assembled in it, for the transaction of their municipal concerns. But this year, the members of that parish, observing the damage which such meetings occasioned to the house, and believing that, since the incorporation of other parishes, the town had no title in it, refused to have it occupied as a town house. This refusal occasioned much controversy between the town and parish, and committees were appointed by both parties to accomplish an adjustment. An engagement was partially made for the occupation of the house, on the payment of twenty-eight dollars annually; but the town refused to sanction the agreement, and the meetings were removed to the Methodist meeting-house, on the eastern part of the common.

The Lynn Academy was opened on the fifth of April, under the care of Mr. William Ballard. A bell was presented to this institution by Col. James Robinson.

An earthquake happened on the sixth of April, at fifteen minutes after two, in the afternoon.

On the eleventh of May, Mr. John Legree Johnson's house, on the east end of the common, was struck by lightning.

A society of Free Masons was constituted on the tenth of June, by the name of Mount Carmel Lodge.

On the twenty-fourth of July, Mr. Charles Adams fell from the rocks at Nipper Stage, on Nahant, and was drowned.

---

1806.

A total eclipse of the sun happened on Monday, the sixteenth of June. It commenced a few minutes after ten in the forenoon, and continued about two hours and a half. The sun rose clear, and the morning was uncommonly pleasant. As the eclipse advanced, the air became damp and cool, like the approach of evening. The birds at first flew about in astonishment, and then retired to their roosts, and the stars appeared. The shadow of the moon was seen travelling across the earth from west to east; and at the moment when the last direct ray

of the sun was intercepted, all things around appeared to waver, as if the earth was falling from its orbit. Several persons fainted, and many were observed to take hold of the objects near them for support. The motion of the spheres was distinctly perceptible, and the whole system appeared to be disordered. It seemed as if the central orb of light and animation was about to be forever extinguished, and creation was returning to its original nonentity. The most unreflecting mind was made sensible of its dependence, and the soul involuntarily sought the protection of its Maker. The total darkness endured about three minutes. When the sun came forth from his obscurity, it was with overwhelming lustre; the dreadful silence, which had spread its dominion over the universe, was broken; the cocks began to crow, the birds renewed their songs, and man and nature seemed to rejoice, as if returning to existence, from which they had been shut out by the unwonted darkness.

The anniversary of American Independence was this year publicly celebrated in Lynn, for the first time. As the spirit of party was exercising its unabated influence, the inhabitants could not unite in performing the honors of the day, and made two processions. The Federalists assembled at the First Congregational meeting-house, where an oration was delivered by Mr. Hosea Hildreth, preceptor of the academy; and the Democrats met at the First Methodist meeting-house, where an oration was pronounced by Dr. Peter G. Robbins. The Democrats dined at the hotel, and the Federalists in the hall of the academy. The orations and toasts of both parties were highly imbued with that spirit of political animadversion, which, for several years, had continued to emanate from all parts of the nation.

---

## 1807.

The town having determined that no person, who was not an inhabitant should have the privilege of taking any sand, shells, or sea manure from the Lynn beaches, this year prosecuted several of the inhabitants of Danvers, for trespassing against this order. The decision of the court established the right of the town to pass such a vote, and left it in legal possession of all the natural treasures which the sea might cast upon its shores.

The depression of commerce and manufactures, at the close of this year, was very great. This was principally occasioned by the state of affairs in Europe, and the spoliation of property in American vessels, by the governments of France and England, which, in the prosecution of their hostilities, had made decrees affecting neutral powers. On the twenty-second of December, Congress passed an act of embargo, by which all the parts of the United States were closed against the clearance of all vessels.

---

## 1808.

The enforcement of the embargo law occasioned great suffering throughout the Union, particularly in commercial places. The harbors were filled with dismantled vessels, which lay rotting at the wharves. Thousands of seamen were thrown out of employment, the price of provisions was enhanced, and the spirit of desolation seemed to be spreading her dark wings over the land. While the Democrats were disposed to regard this state of things, as requisite to preserve the dignity of the nation, and the energy of government, the Federalists viewed it as an impolitic, unjust, and arbitrary measure, by which the interests of commerce were sacrificed to the will of party. The spirit of opposition, in this difference of opinion, was put forth in its utmost strength. At the election in April, the greatest number of votes was produced which had at that time been given in the town; of which 418 were for James Sullivan, and 273 for Christopher Gore. On the second of May, the people assembled for the choice of representatives. The Democratic party voted to choose three, and the Federalists were inclined to send none. As there was some difficulty in ascertaining the vote, it was determined that the people should go out of the house, and arrange themselves on different sides of the common, to be counted. The Democrats went out, but a part of the Federalists remained, and took possession of the house. They chose a town clerk, to whom the oath of office was administered, voted to send no representative, and made a record of their proceeding in the town book. The other party then returned, and chose three representatives. Several of the principal Federalists were afterward prosecuted for their infringement of a legal town meeting; but as it appeared on examina-



tion, that none of the town meetings had been legal for many years, because not called by a warrant, they were exonerated. On the twenty-ninth of August, a meeting was held to petition the president to remove the embargo; but the town voted that such a proceeding would be highly improper, and passed several resolutions, approving the measures of the administration. On the following day, the Federalists prepared a memorial, expressing their disapprobation of the embargo, and requesting its repeal, which was transmitted to the President. The feelings of both parties appear to have been raised to a degree of excitement, which could only be sustained by political events of unusual occurrence.

On the twentieth of September, the house of widow Jerusha Williams, in Market Street, was struck by lightning. On the same afternoon, the lightning fell on a flock of sheep at Nahant, which were gathered beside a wall for shelter, and killed eighteen of them.

On the night of Monday, October thirty-first, Mr. Theophilus Breed's barn, on the south side of the common, was burned; and on the night of the following Thursday, a barn belonging to Mr. Jacob Chase, on the opposite side of the common, was consumed; both of them having been set on fire by a mischievous boy.

A company of Artillery was incorporated by the General Court, on the eighteenth of November, and two brass field pieces allowed them.

---

## 1809.

This year the inhabitants petitioned the General Court for an act to establish the proceedings of the town in their previous meetings, which had been illegal, in consequence of the meetings having been called by a notice from the Selectmen, instead of a warrant to a constable. A resolve confirming the proceedings of the town was passed by the Court on the eighteenth of February.

The embargo law was repealed by Congress, on the twelfth of April, and an act of non-intercourse with France and England, substituted in its place.

## 1810.

The fourth of July was this year celebrated by both political parties, who very patriotically and cordially united for that purpose. They formed a procession at the Lynn hotel, which was then kept by Mr. Ebenezer Lewis, and proceeded to the First Congregational meeting-house, where an oration was delivered by Dr. Peter G. Robbins. They then returned to the hotel, where they dined, and offered a wreath of toasts in honor of the day. The young Federalists had a separate celebration.

This year the school-house in Franklin street was built, and a hotel at the Mineral Spring.

On the twenty-fifth of August, Mr. David Dunn was drowned from a gondola, in Saugus river.

On Friday evening, November ninth, there was a loud earthquake.

---

1811.

On the eighth of January, Ayer Williams Marsh, aged five years, was killed by the falling of an anvil, from a cheese press.

A great snow storm commenced on the second of February, and continued three days. It was piled up in reefs, in some places more than fifteen feet. In Market street, arches were dug beneath it, high enough for carriages to pass through.

On the Fourth of July, the officers of Lynn, Marblehead, and Danvers, had a military celebration at Lynn. The young Federalists also partook of a dinner in the hall of Lewis's hotel, which was tastefully decorated for the occasion, by the young ladies.

The seventh of July was excessively hot. The thermometer rose to 101 degrees in the shade. Mr. John Jacobs, aged 70 years, while laboring on the salt marsh, fell dead in consequence of the heat.

On the seventh of August, George, a black man, aged 20 years, a servant at the hotel, was drowned, while bathing in the fatal river Saugus.

A splendid comet was visible on the eleventh of October, between Arcturus and Lyra. Its train was estimated to be forty

millions of miles in length. It remained visible for several months.

A separation was this year made of the Methodist society, and a new society was formed in the eastern part of the town, called Wood End, where a meeting-house was built, which was dedicated on the twenty-seventh of November.

The first Methodist Society of Lynn was organized on the twentieth of February, 1791. On the twenty-first of June following, a house of worship was raised, which was so far completed as to be dedicated on the twenty-sixth of the same month. This was the first Methodist meeting-house in Massachusetts. Several members of the first Congregational church united with this society, and with them the two deacons, who took with them the vessels of the communion service. These vessels consist of four large silver tankards, eleven silver cups, and one silver fount for baptism, presented to the first Congregational society by the Hon. John Burrill, Theophilus Burrill, Esq. and Mr. John Breed. The removal of this plate occasioned a difference between the societies, and the first church was compelled to borrow vessels from the church at Saugus for the communion. The deacons afterward offered to return one half, and in prospect of a prosecution they relinquished the whole. In 1794, the Congregational church invited those of its members who had seceded to the Methodist society, to be reunited; and within a few years, one of the deacons, and several of the other members returned.

---

## 1812.

The Hon. Joseph Fuller was chosen a senator for Essex County.

On the eighteenth of June, the Congress of the United States declared war against England. On the eighteenth of July, a town meeting was called, by request of the Federalists, to petition the government to discontinue the war. When the petition for calling the meeting had been read, the Democrats voted, without hesitation or debate, to throw it under the table. They then proceeded to pass resolutions, evincing their entire approbation of the measures of the administration, pledging their exertions for the support of the government, and expressing

their disapprobation of the conduct of the Federal party, in terms the most positive and decided.

A new meeting-house was this year built by the first Methodist Society, on the common. The burial ground in Union street was opened.

---

## 1813.

The pastoral relation between the Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher and the first parish, was dissolved on the third of February. A portion of his people seem to have been dissatisfied with him, and the circumstances of the parish were viewed as requiring a separation, with which he appears to have complied with reluctance. In his last communications to the people of his charge, he says—"The impressive hour has arrived, when motives of commanding authority compel me to request your consent, that the pastoral connexion existing between us, should be forever dissolved. No common consideration *could* induce this request, no trifling privations *ought* to do it, and no mind possessed of the smallest degree of religious sensibility, but must feel on such an occasion. I became your minister under an idea of an engagement for life, resigned all other prospects, devoted to you the morning and vigor of my days, on the faith of your contract became a husband and a father, and in this way have, in a great measure, lost the opportunity of qualifying myself for any other pursuits in life. I have lived with you almost nineteen years, and have endeavored not to shun to declare the whole counsel of God; and if I know my heart, have always desired the best good of you and your children. In the discharge of these duties, I am sensible of many imperfections, and have to lament that the cause of religion has been so little effectual in my hands. After living with you so long, and patiently enduring so much, I am now called to throw myself, without fortune, on the world, and at a period when, from general embarrassment of the country, even the young and vigorous feel so much difficulty in finding support—I am called upon, having passed the meridian of life, and being surrounded by a helpless family, to go elsewhere, and find, if I can, a precarious subsistence." On his separation, the people made him a present of eight hundred dollars, and the council gave him a recommendation in favor of his moral character.

His father was the Rev. Peter Thacher, minister of Brattle street church, in Boston. He was born at Malden and graduated at Harvard University, in 1790. He was ordained at Lynn in 1794, and now resides at Cambridge Port. His sermons are characterized by a purity and felicity of expression, and a classic elegance of style. The following is a list of his printed works.

1. A sermon on the annual Thanksgiving, 1794.
2. A sermon at the interment of Eight Seamen, 1795.
3. An eulogy on the death of Washington, 1800.
4. A sermon on the death of Mrs. Ann Carnes, 1800.
5. A masonic address, delivered at Cambridge.
6. A sermon on the death of Mr. Shory and wife, 1803.

In the town meeting in March, thirty-nine tythingmen were chosen.

The celebrated Mary Pitcher, a professed fortune teller, died on the ninth of April, 1813, at the age of 75 years. Her grandfather, John Diamond, lived at Marblehead, and was for many years celebrated for the exercise of the same pretensions. She was married to Robert Pitcher of Lynn, in 1760, and had several children. This person has been more celebrated than any individual of her class in modern times. Not only was her name known in most towns throughout the United States, but probably there is not a port in Europe, visited by American ships, that has not heard of the skill of "Moll Pitcher." Many persons came from places far remote, to consult with her on affairs of love or loss of property, or to obtain her surmises respecting the vicissitudes of their future fortune. Every youth who was not assured of the reciprocal affection of his fair one, and every maid who was desirous of anticipating the hour of her highest felicity, repaired at evening to the humble dwelling of Molly Pitcher, which stood on what was then a lonely road, near the foot of High Rock, with a single habitation nearly opposite, at the gate of which stood two bones of the great whale, which the waves of ocean, in the liberality of their power, had cast upon the beach. To that place also were seen repairing sailors from the neighboring commercial towns, who were desirous of ascertaining the probable success of their future voyages. Many a reputable merchant too, of whose treasures on the faithless waves, the courier of intelligence had not brought the expected information, and being fearful of betraying the nature of his business by inquiring directly for "Moll Pitcher," has raised a smile by asking in what part of the town he should

find the bones of the great whale. Her skill was principally exercised for the discovery of things lost, either material objects which had been mislaid or purloined, or the affections of some disconsolate fair one, which had taken the advantage of some favorable opportunity to clope. Her power of evil, if she possessed any, was never exerted, unless to punish such delinquents as refused to pay her for the knowledge which she pretended to impart. Some instances have been related, in which she has evinced an unusual degree of discernment; while in others her assertions have had no relation to facts, but appear to have been the result of mere guess work and presumption. Her only ostensible means of obtaining secret knowledge, was the simple use of tea-grounds poured into a cup; and as the grains were disposed in a peculiar manner, or assumed a particular form, so she judged of the things to which she fancied a resemblance. She also availed herself of every ordinary mode of information, particularly by causing one of her domestics to talk with her visitors, to elicit the nature of their business, while she remained in an adjoining room, pretending to be absent. These arts, added to her natural shrewdness, and readiness to seize the slightest hint which might assist her in her surmises, appear to have constituted the whole amount of her power. Her sagacity bore no proportion to the infatuation of those who trusted to it. She seems even to have admitted this, especially in one instance, when some gentlemen offered her a large sum, if she would inform them what ticket would draw the highest prize in a certain lottery. "Do you think," said she, "if I knew, I should not buy it myself?" Whatever may have been the witchcraft recognised in the Hebrew law, whether an actual communication with evil spirits, or the practice of deception by the means of false pretensions, an impartial investigation of the facts respecting "Moll Pitcher," justify the conclusion, that her skill had no other foundation, than the practice of uncommon arts, assisted by an unusual degree of shrewdness and discernment.

On the first of June, the people of Lynn were called forth by an occasion of unusual interest. The English frigate *Shannon*, commanded by Captain Brock, being expressly fitted for the purpose, approached the harbor of Boston, and challenged the American frigate to battle. The hills and the house-tops were crowded with anxious spectators, and the whole scene presented a panorama of uncommon sublimity and intense solicitude. The *Chesapeake*, commanded by Captain James Law-

rence, sailed out beyond Nahant, in all her pride and beauty, and engaged with her adversary. After a short and desperate conflict, Captain Lawrence fell, the colors of the Chesapeake were lowered, and the Shannon with her prize departed for Halifax.

The anniversary of American Independence was this year celebrated by the people of Lynn. An oration was delivered at the First Congregational meeting-house, by Robert W. Trevett, Esquire ; after which a considerable number of the inhabitants dined at the Hotel.

Mr. Isaac Hurd was ordained pastor of the first parish, on the fifteenth of September.

---

## 1814.

The district of Lynnfield, which was separated from Lynn on the third of July 1782, was this year incorporated as a town, on the twenty-eighth of February. On the same day, the Lynn Mechanics' Bank was incorporated, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The Town-House on the Common was begun the same month.

A company of militia, consisting of seventy-eight men from Essex county, was detached, in July, for the defence of the sea-coast. Of this number, Lynn furnished fifteen, and the whole were placed under the command of Captain Samuel Mudge, of this town. On the first of August, they mustered at Danvers, and on the next day marched to Salem, and encamped on Winter Island. On the twenty-seventh, a violent storm blew down most of the tents, and on the next day the detachment removed to Fort Lee. On the night of the twenty-eighth of September, a great alarm was occasioned by some men who were drawing a seine at Beverly. Alarm guns were fired about midnight, and in less than thirty minutes the Salem regiment was drawn up for orders. Nearly sixty old men of that town also took their arms, went directly to the fort, and patriotically offered their services to Captain Mudge. The alarm spread to the neighboring towns, and within an hour the Lynn regiment was in arms, and on its march toward Salem. The promptitude with which these two regiments were formed, the self-possession manifested by the officers and soldiers, and the readiness with which they marched toward what

was then confidently believed to be a scene of action and danger, has rarely been surpassed. The company was discharged on the first of November. During a considerable part of this season, guards were stationed in Lynn, on Long Wharf and Saugus Bridge. The town, with its accustomed liberality, allowed to each of its soldiers, who went into service, thirty dollars, in addition to the pay of the government, which was only eight dollars a month.

An instance has recently been discovered of a request, made by some of the inhabitants of Lynn, to the General Court, for a remuneration of their services in the war with the Indians, in 1676, which was granted with that prompt liberality, so generally manifested by our ancestors, whenever the claims of merit or misfortune were presented. As this petition is interesting, it is transcribed from the files of the Court.

“To the Honoured Governour and Company, the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay, that is to be assembled the 27 May 1685, the humble petition of several inhabitants of Lynn, who were sold, impressed, and sent forth for the service of the country, that was with the Indians in the long march in the Nipmugg<sup>1</sup> country, and the fight at the fort in Narragansett, humbly sheweth, That your petitioners did, in obedience unto the authority which God had set over them, and love to their country, leave their deare relations, some of us our dear wives and children, which we would have gladly remained at home, and the bond of love and duty would have bound us to choose rather soe to have done considering the season and time of the year, when that hard service was to be performed. But your petitioners left what was dear to them, and preferred the publike weal above the private enjoyments, and did cleave thereunto, and exposed ourselves to the difficulties and hardships of the winter, as well as the dangers of that cruel warr, with consideration to the enemy. What our hardships and difficulties were is well known to some of your worships, being our honoured magistrates, as also what mercy it was from the Lord, who alone preserved us, and gave us our lives for a prey, by leading us through such imminent dangers, whereby the Lord gave us to see many of our dear friends lose their blood and life, which might have been our case, but that God soe disposed toward us deliverance and strength to returne to our homes, which we desire to remember and acknowledge to his most glorious praise. But yet we take the boldnes to signifie to this

---

<sup>1</sup> Worcester County.



honored Court, how that service was noe whit to our particular outward advantage, but to the contrary much to our disadvantage. Had we had the liberty of staying at home as our neighbors had, though we had paid double rates, it would have been to our advantage, as indeed we did pay our properties by our estates in the publick rates, to the utmost bounds. Notwithstanding all, yet we humbly conceive that by the suppression of the enemy, which God of his great mercy vouchsafed, wee poor soldiers and servants to the country were instruments to procure much land, which we doubt not shall and will be improved, by the prudence of this honoured Court, unto people that need most especially. And we, your poor petitioners, are divers of us in need of land, for want whereof some of us are forced upon considerations of departing this Colony and Government, to seek accommodations, whereby the better to maintaine the charge in our families, with our wives and children, and to leave unto them when the Lord shall take us away by death, which we must expect. And divers of us have reason to fear our days may be much shortened by our hard service in the war, from the pains and aches of our bodies, that we feel in our bones and sinews, and lameness thereby taking hold of us much, especially at the spring and fall, whereby we are hindered and disabled of that ability for our labour which we constantly had through the mercy of God before, that served in the warrs. Now your poore petitioners are hopeful this honoured Court will be moved with consideration and some respect to the poor soldiery, and particularly to us, that make bold to prefer our petition, humbly to crave, that we whose names are hereunto subscribed, may be so graciously considered by this honored Court as to grant us some good tracks of land in the Nipmugg country, where we may find a place for a township, that we, your petitioners, and our posterity may live in the same colony where our fathers did, and left us, and probably many of those who went fellow soldiers in the war may be provided for, and their children also, in the portion of conquered lands their fathers fought for. Your petitioners think it is but a very reasonable request, which will be no way offensive to this honored Court, which if they shall please to grant unto your petitioners, it will not only be satisfaction to their spirits for their service already done, but be a future obligation to them and theirs after them for future service, and ever to pray." This petition was signed by twenty-five inhabitants of Lynn, whose names were, William Bassett, John Farrington, Nathaniel Bal-

lard, Timothy Bree, Jonathan Locke, Daniel Johnson, Widow Hathorne, Samuel Tarbox, Samuel Graves, John Edmunds, Samuel Johnson, Daniel Golt, Joseph Hawkes, Andrew Townsend, John Davis, Joseph Collins, Samuel Mower, Robert Potter, senior, Joseph Mansfield, Robert Driver, John Richards, John Linzey, Philip Kertland, Joseph Breed, Henry Rhodes. It was also signed by sixteen persons of other towns. On the third of June, the Court granted them a tract of land in Worcester county, eight miles square, on condition that thirty families, with an orthodox minister, should settle there within four years.

The people of Lynn appear to have suffered in other instances from the Indians. Penhallow informs us, that in 1724, the Indians "fell on a sloop at Kennebunk, which belonged to Lynn, and killed the whole company."

On the night of November nineteenth, Mr. Ward Hartwell of Charlemont, New-Hampshire, perished in attempting to cross Lynn Beach.

An earthquake happened on the twenty-eighth of November, at twenty minutes past seven in the evening.

---

## 1815.

The second parish of Lynn was incorporated on the seventeenth of February, as a separate town, by the name of Saugus. On the same day, a treaty of peace with England, which was signed at Ghent on the twenty-fourth of December preceding, was ratified by Congress.

A very great storm on the twenty-third of September, occasioned much damage. The wind blew violently from the south-east, and buildings, fences, and trees, fell before it. A part of the roof of the Academy was taken off, and carried by the wind more than half-way across the common. The spray of the ocean was borne far upon the land, and the fruit on trees several miles from the shore, was impregnated with salt.

---

## 1816.

The Baptist Society in Lynn was incorporated on the fifteenth of April. Their first minister was the Rev. George

Phippen, who was succeeded by the Rev. Ebenezer Nelson junior. The house in which they worship is the one built by the Methodists, in 1791.

The ministerial connexion between the Rev. Isaac Hurd and the First Congregational Society, was dissolved, on the twenty-second of May, by mutual consent. Mr. Hurd was born in Charlestown, and removed to Exeter.

On the twenty-second of November, the old bell was taken from the First Congregational meeting-house, and a new one, of a much larger size, substituted in its stead. At the same time, a new bell was placed on the First Methodist meeting-house.

This year, the covenant of the First Congregational church being lost, a committee was appointed to prepare a new one. A copy of the original covenant has since been found, written on the leaf of a pocket bible, belonging to the Rev. Nathaniel Henchman. The following is a transcript.

“The Covenant of the First Church of Christ in Lynn.”  
1636.

“We do give up ourselves to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, as to the only true and living God; avouching God the Father to be our father; embracing the Lord Jesus Christ as our only Saviour, in all his offices, prophetic, sacerdotal, and regal; depending on the Blessed Spirit of Grace to be our Sanctifier, Teacher, Guide, and Comforter, and to make effectual application of the redemption purchased by Christ unto us; promising by the assistance, and through the sanctifying influences of that Blessed Spirit, to cleave unto this one God and Mediator, as his covenant people. We believe the revelation God hath made of himself, and our duty, in his word, to be true; and through grace strengthening, we promise to comply with the whole will of God, so far as he shall discover it to us. We promise, by the assistance of Divine Grace, to walk before God in our houses, in sincerity of heart; that we will uphold the worship of God therein; endeavoring to bring up all under our inspection, in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. We shall endeavour the mortification of our own sins, and we covenant to reprove sin in others, as far as the rule requires; promising in brotherly love to watch over one another, and to submit ourselves to the government of Christ in this church, and to attend the orders thereof. We do likewise solemnly agree by all means to study and endeavour the peace of this church, and the maintenance of the purity of the worship

of God therein ; that so the blessing of God may be vouchsafed to this his heritage. We do also give up ourselves to one another in the Lord, solemnly binding ourselves to walk together in the ways of his worship, and to cleave to his ordinances, according to the rules of his word. This you heartily comply with and consent to. You are now members in full communion with this church, purchased by the blood of Christ ; and you do now seriously, solemnly, deliberately, and forever ; in the presence of God, by whom you expect shortly to be judged, and by whom you hope to be acquitted ; in the presence of an innumerable company of elect angels, and in the presence of this assembly ; give up yourselves to God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost ; avouching the Lord Jehovah to be your God. You give up yourselves unto this church ; submitting to the holy rule and ordinance of it ; putting yourselves under the care and inspection of it ; promising to embrace counsel and reproofs with humbleness and thankfulness ; and duly to attend the administration of the ordinances of the Gospel in this church ; so long as your opportunities thereby to be edified in your holy faith shall be continued. We then, the church of the Lord, do receive you into our sacred fellowship, as those whom we trust Christ hath received ; and we promise to admit you to all the ordinances of the Gospel in fellowship with us ; to watch over you with a spirit of love and meekness, not for your halting but helping ; to treat you with all that affection which your sacred relation to us now calleth for ; and to continue our ardent prayers for you, to the Father of Light, that you may have grace to keep this solemn covenant, you have now, before God, angels, and men, entered into ; that so the sure mercies of the everlasting covenant may be your portion forever. Amen."

To those persons who did not wholly unite with this church, but only assented to the covenant, for the privilege of having their children baptized, the following was read, immediately after the words "consent to."

"You do now in the presence of God, angels, and this assembly, avouch this one God in 3 persons to be your God ; engaging to be his, only, constantly, and everlastingly. You do further promise to labour in preparing for the table of the Lord, that in due time you may make your approaches to God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord and Giver of eternal life, in all his ordinances and appointments ; that at last you may give up your account with joy, unto Christ, the Judge of all."

The following is the covenant adopted this year.

"You declare your belief in one God in three persons, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost ; that Jesus Christ is the only Redeemer and Savior of men ; that he died to make atonement, and rose, and ascended into heaven to make intercession with the Father for sinners. You do now, in the presence of God, his holy angels, and these witnesses, give up yourself to Him, in an everlasting covenant, through the mediation of his Son. You believe the scriptures to have been given by the inspiration of God ; that they are profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, and for instruction in righteousness. You do sincerely repent of all your sins, and humbly ask forgiveness of God ; resolving, in reliance on his gracious assistance, and the sanctifying influence of his spirit, unfeignedly to forsake them. You promise seriously to read the word of God, and by the help of his divine grace, to practice all the duties enjoined therein ; that forsaking the vices and follies of the world, you will endeavor to walk in the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. You acknowledge us to be a church of Christ, and that, while in communion with us, you will attend upon the ordinances, and submit to the discipline of the church, as experienced among us, and as far as it is in your power promote its increase and welfare. These things you believe and promise. We then, the church of our Lord Jesus Christ in this place, do admit and receive you into our fellowship to watch over you in the Lord, to walk together in brotherly love, and to conduct towards you as becometh our sacred relation. In token of which, we commend you to God, and to the word of his Grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among those who are sanctified."

---

## 1817.

Friday the fourteenth of February, was one of the coldest days that happened for many years. The thermometer was eighteen degrees below zero.

The incorporation of Lynn Academy was dissolved, by an act of the General Court, on the sixteenth of June.

A marine animal, of a very singular appearance, is said to have been first observed this year, on the nineteenth of August, in the waters of Gloucester harbour. It was represented

as a serpent, from fifty to seventy feet in length, moving very swiftly, in undulations, with its head sometimes resting on the water, and sometimes raised several feet above it. Statements were publicly made of its appearance again in August, 1818, and in July, 1819, off Scituate. On the thirteenth and fourteenth days of August, in the same year, several hundred persons were collected on Lynn Beach, by a report that it was to be seen. On the fifth of August, 1820, it was again said to have been observed off Swampscot; on the second of August, 1821, off Portsmouth; on the eighth near Nahant; on the twelfth of July, 1823, near Egg Rock; and some time afterward off Charleston, South Carolina. That some unusual appearance was observed in the waters, is evident from the depositions of numerous individuals. I have never seen the animal, but many respectable persons have testified of its appearance, at different times, and in different places; and their accounts have generally agreed with this description.

An earthquake happened on Sunday, September seventh; and another on the fifth of October.

The Schoolhouse in Chesnut Street was built this year.

---

## 1818.

On Friday, the thirteenth of January, the thermometer was eleven degrees below zero.

Mr. Otis Rockwood was ordained pastor of the First Congregational Society, on the first day of July.

A stone building was this year erected at Nahant, for a Chapel and Library, in which the Episcopal service was occasionally read. An elegant folio Prayer Book, formerly belonging to George the fourth of England, was presented to this library by the lady of Governor Gore; and several hundred volumes of miscellaneous works were added, by gentlemen and ladies of Boston, and other places.

A difference having for some time existed between the town and the proprietors of Nahant, respecting the privileges of the town in the beaches, coves, and inlets, of that island, committees were chosen by both parties, to settle the dispute. These committees could not agree, and referred the subject to five gentlemen of other towns. After a careful inquiry, the committee of arbitration were convinced that the dispute involved

important consequences, and declined making a decision. The subject yet remains undetermined; the inhabitants of the town continue to claim their ancient privileges, and the proprietors of Nahant in some instances have obstructed them, by wharves and fences, running out to the water's edge.

In the records, the bounds of the lots bordering on the sea are not particularly defined, and the privileges and appurtenances granted by the town to the proprietors are not expressly stated. The proprietorship and privileges of Nahant appear to have been subjects of dispute and litigation from the settlement of the town. That Thomas Dexter purchased the island, in 1630, of Duke William, for a suit of clothes, is evident from the testimonies already given, to which the following may be added.

1. "This I Christopher Linsie doe testifie; that Thomas Dexter bought Nahant of Blacke Will, or Duke William, and employed me to fence part of it, when I lived with Thomas Dexter."

2. "I John Legg, aged 47 years or thereabouts, doe testifie, that when I was Mr. Humphrey's servant, there came unto my master's house one Blacke Will, as wee called him, an Indian, with a compleate Suit on his backe, I asked him where he had that suit, he said he had it of ffarmer Dexter, and he had sould him Nahant for it."

But though it is evident that an agreement was made by Mr. Dexter with the Indian Chief, he does not appear to have occupied the land but a short time; and the town evidently regarded it as their property, as will appear by the following extracts from the town records.

1. January 11, 1635. "It is also voted by the freeman of the towne, that these men underwritten shall have liberty to plant and build at Nahant, and shall possess each man land for the said purpose, and proceeding in the trade of fishing. Mr. Humfreys, Daniel How, Mr. Ballard, Joseph Redknapp, Francis Dent, Timothy Tomlins, Richard Walker, Thomas Talmage, Henry Feakes."

2. January 18, 1635. "It is ordered by the freemen of the towne, that all such persons as are assigned any land at Nahant, to further the trade of making fish, That if they do not proceed accordingly to forward the said trade, but either doe grow remiss, or else give it quite over, that then all such

lots shall be forfeited againe to the towne, to dispose of as shall be thought fit.”<sup>1</sup>

As the persons to whom this grant was made, forfeited their right by neglect, the town afterward passed the following order:

“At a towne meeting held February 24, 1656, It was voted that Nahant should be laid out in planting lots, and every householder should have equal in the dividing of it, noe man more than another, and every person to clear his of wood in 6 years, and he or they that do not clear their lots of the wood, shall pay 50 shillings for the towne’s use. Alsoe every householder is to have his and their lots for 7 years, and it is to be laid downe for a pasture for the towne, and in the seventh year, every one that hath improved his lott by planting shall then, that is in the seventh year, sow their lott with English Corne, and in every acre of land as they improve, they shall with their English corne, sow one bushel of English hay seed, and soe proportionable to all the land that is improved, a bushell of hay seed to one acre of land, and it is to be remembered that no person is to raise any kind of building at all, and for laying out this land there is chosen Francis Ingals, Henry Collins, James Axee, Adam Hawckes, Lieut. Thomas Marshall, John Hathorne, Andrew Mansfield.”

Immediately on the passing of this order, Mr. Dexter brought forward his claim to Nahant, on the plea of his purchase of Duke William; but the case was decided against him, as mentioned under the date of 1657. In 1687, Mr. Edmund Randolph presented a petition to Governor Andross, for the gift of Nahant, which was opposed by the inhabitants of Lynn, as noticed in 1689. Against these claims a memorial, signed by seventy of the inhabitants, was presented to the Court, in which the right of the town was supported. The memorialists say—“We have honestly *purchased* the said tract of land with our *money* of the original proprietors of the soil, viz. the natives, and *have* firme confirmation thereof under hand and seal, according to law. We have improved said land upwards of fifty years, for soe long since it hath been built upon, and inhabited by tenants, paying their acknowledgments yeare after yeare.” In 1695, the claim of Mr. Dexter was renewed by Mary Daffern, one of his descendants, who was nonsuited.—Since that time the right of the town does not appear to have been disputed. A second division of the lands was made in



1706, and the rights and privileges of the proprietors not being defined, remain a subject for future adjustment.

The First Social Library in Lynn, was incorporated.

---

## 1819.

A Society of Christians was this year organized, on the twenty-seventh of January, by the name of St. John's Church. Impressed with the beauty and order of the American Episcopal Church, they adopted her liturgy, and pledged themselves to be governed by her rules. The Rev. Thomas Carlile, minister of St. Peter's Church, in Salem, was chosen Rector; and an elegant service of Plate for the Communion, was afterward presented by Mr. John Sowdon, of Boston. Their place of worship was the Academy. The services were for some time performed by Mr. Carlile, and afterward by Mr. Chase and Mr. Jones. Bishop Griswold visited this Church, and spoke in the most respectful terms of its order and devotion. This was the first attempt to form an Episcopal Church at Lynn, although professors of that faith have been found in the town before. By a record of the first parish it appears, that on the 24th of March, 1773, Mr. John Lewis was exempted from the payment of parish taxes, "on account of his professing to be a Churchman."

On the thirty-first of January, Mr. Jonathan Mansfield was drowned in the Flax Pond. On the sixth of April, Mr. William Phillips was drowned at the mouth of Saugus river; and on the fourth of September, Mr. Asa Gowdy was drowned near the same place.

A new Comet made its appearance this year, which was observed to cross the sun's disc, at Greenwich, England, on the twenty-sixth of June.

Tuesday, the sixth of July, was an uncommonly warm day. The thermometer, at noon, stood 100 degrees in the shade, and in the open sun, it rose to 120.

This year a farm, containing forty-eight acres, was purchased by the town, on Willis's Hill, on which a new Almshouse was built.

## 1820.

On the fourteenth of February, two barns in Summer street, belonging to Mr. Joseph Breed, were burned by the carelessness of a boy. The inhabitants of the town, with that promptitude of generosity by which they have ever been characterized, immediately appointed a committee, who obtained funds by subscription, and within a week, built him a good barn, which they well stocked with hay.

This year an elegant Hotel was built of stone, on the eastern part of Nahant.

## 1821.

On the twenty-fifth of January, the thermometer was seventeen degrees below zero.

The corner stone of Masonic Hall was laid on the twenty-fourth of June. An address was delivered by the Rev. Cheever Felch.

The Rev. Joseph Mottey died on the ninth of July. He was born at Salem, on the fourteenth of May, 1756, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1778. After having been employed as an assistant in Phillips and Dummer Academies, he was ordained at Lynnfield, then the third parish of Lynn, on the twenty-fourth of September, 1783. He married Elizabeth Moody of York, in the State of Maine, who died on the twenty-seventh of August, 1787, aged 32 years. He had five children, Charles, Elias, Charles Edward, Eliza, and one other daughter. Mr. Mottey was characterized by an extreme degree of sensibility, and an uncommon fondness for retirement. He performed the ministerial duties in his parish for nearly thirty-eight years, and though he resided within nine miles of his native town, he never preached in it. His manners were affable, his conversation easy and agreeable, and his mode of preaching mild and persuasive. His printed works are the following.

1. The right hand of fellowship at the ordination of Rev. Thomas Cushing Thacher.
2. Two sermons on the death of Mr. Roby, 1803.
3. An address on the establishment of Peace, 1805.

4. An article on original sin, in the *Christian Disciple*, 1820. This year the town was divided into eight new school districts.

---

## 1822.

A great disturbance was this year occasioned in the society of Quakers at Lynn. A division of opinion had some time before been formed among the members; both parties professing to maintain the sentiments of the ancient Quakers. The contention became violent, and opposite opinions were frequently advanced in the same meeting. Several members of one party, conceiving it to be their duty to bear testimony against what they deemed the spiritual pride and formality of the other party, on Wednesday, the fourteenth of February, took places in the high seats, where the ministers, overseers and elderly people were accustomed to sit. From these, one of them was taken by several persons, and expelled with such violence, that, in his resistance, the seat was broken. On the following Sunday, they again took places in the high seats. One of them had a sword by his side, which, he said, was an emblem of the warlike disposition of the other party. Several persons advanced, and amid a great disturbance and outcry among the men, and fright among the women, they cut the belt, and took the sword away. In the afternoon a large concourse of men and boys, from other societies, assembled around the house. A great tumult was soon occasioned, by the attempt to remove several persons from the high seats. Much noise was made by screaming and crowding; some persons had their clothes torn, others were pushed out of the house, and one person was lamed. The deputy sheriff was called from the first parish meeting-house, who came and read the riot act in the street. Four of the persons who had taken the high seats were apprehended, and carried to a neighboring building, where they were confined for the night. On the next day, they were committed to prison at Salem, where they remained till the time of their trial, at Ipswich, on the sixteenth of March. Two of them were then discharged, and the others fined. A report of this trial was published, with a review in a separate pamphlet. Several persons were disowned for their conduct and opinions, and many left the society voluntarily, and went to other places of worship.

The members of the Episcopal Church continued to worship in the Academy about four years, and made preparations for building a church, and obtaining an act of incorporation. But finding that many of their number were disposed to form an independent society, they relinquished their designs, and discontinued their meetings.

The first Circulating Library at Lynn was opened this year, by the author of this sketch.

The Second Congregational Society was incorporated on the fifteenth of June ; and on the twenty-fifth of November, the corner stone of the first Unitarian meeting house was laid, with an address by the Rev. Joseph Tuckerman, of Chelsea.

As some workmen were this year digging a cellar in Liberty street, they found the skeleton of an Indian. It was more than six feet in length, and the skull was of an uncommon thickness. Two large clam shells were found buried with it.

---

## 1823.

The coldest day this year, was the first of March. The thermometer was seven degrees below zero.

The second congregational meeting house was dedicated on the thirtieth of April.

The Hon. Aaron Lummus was chosen a Senator for Essex County.

---

## 1824.

The tide, during great storms, had for many years been making its encroachments upon Lynn Beach, washing its sands over into the harbor, and sometimes making deep channels, as it ran across in rivulets. In compliance with a petition of the town, the General Court, on the eighteenth of February, made a grant of fifteen hundred dollars, to which the town added fifteen hundred more ; and by the aid of this fund, a causeway was constructed, about half the length of the beach, to prevent the encroachments of the tide.

The thermometer, on the twenty-fifth of February, was ten degrees below zero.

John Gilbert Pratt, aged eight years, son of Mr. Micajah C. Pratt, was drowned, on the fourteenth of April, from a boat, in the harbor.

On the twenty-first of June, Mr. Joseph Searl, of Byfield, was ordained pastor of the Congregational society in Lynnfield. He continued his connexion with that parish, till the seventeenth of September, 1827, when he removed to Stoncham.

The French General Lafayette, who served in the army of the confederation, in the war of independence, this year came to America, and was received with general gratulation and welcome. He passed through Lynn on the thirty-first of August. He was received at Saugus bridge by an escort, consisting of a battalion of cavalry, the Lynn Rifle Company, Lynn Light Infantry, the Salem Cadets, and a large number of officers and citizens, by whom he was conducted to the Lynn Hotel, where an address was delivered to him by Captain John White, to which he made an affectionate reply. After being introduced to many gentlemen and ladies, with several revolutionary soldiers, he ascended an open barouche, and passed through two lines of the children of the town, who threw flowers into his carriage as he proceeded. A salute of thirteen guns was fired, on his entrance into the town; and another of twenty-four, when he left the Hotel. On his way he passed through seven beautiful arches, decorated with evergreens, flags, and festoons of flowers; and bearing inscriptions in honor of Lafayette and Freedom. Proceeding through the principal streets, he was received, at the eastern boundary of the town, by another escort, and conducted to Marblehead.

Mr. James Dimon Green was ordained pastor of the Second Congregational Society, on the third of November.

---

## 1825.

For several days in the month of April, the moon and stars, with the planet Venus, were visible, for several hours, in the middle of the day. There were no clouds, and the sun shone with a dim light.

On the twentieth of April, a piece of land, adjoining the Quaker burial Ground in Lynn, was purchased, by several individuals, and opened as a free burial ground. This was done, because that society had refused to permit a child to be buried

in their ground, without a compliance with prescribed conditions. This refusal, and the subsequent removal of the bones of the dead from the Quaker burial ground at Boston, became the subject of remark in the public papers; and particularly of several poetical pieces in the *Lynn Mirror*, in which the conduct of the Quakers, as a public body, was strongly censured. A writer in the *Boston Centinel*, with the signature of "Poetus Minus," having undertaken to reply to those remarks, and being unable to refute them, attempted to divert their force, by a violent, personal, and ungentlemanly attack upon my individual character, which certainly had no connexion with the subject. The gentleman Editor of the *Centinel* told me, that the essay of Poetus Minus found its way into his columns, without his knowledge or consent, and that had he been acquainted with the circumstances, it would not have been admitted. As the essay was anonymous, no one is under any obligation to believe,—or to notice it;—but as interested persons have been disposed to employ it to the prejudice of the truth, I shall make a plain statement of facts, to show how the public faith has been imposed upon. After the writer in the *Centinel* had asserted that the child was not denied interment, I called on the parents, who gave me the following testimony.

"We do by this certify, that on the death of our child, in the month of April, 1825, we applied to the Society of Friends, of which the child, as well as its father, was a member, for permission to bury it in the Friend's burying ground, and were virtually *denied*.

DANIEL NEWHALL,

Lynn, August 24, 1826.

MARY NEWHALL."

The afflicted mother herself wrote an article, which was published in the *Centinel*, in which she maintains the truth of this statement, and says, in reference to the request, that the Committee "were expostulated with, and the reasonableness of the thing enforced, but to no purpose." The anonymous writer says that the society purchased the ground, but the following testimony fully disproves that assertion.

"This may certify, that in the month of April, 1825, we purchased and appropriated a piece of land in Lynn, to be used as a Free Burying Ground, and that the Society of Friends did not purchase it.

JAMES PRATT.

Lynn, December 16, 1826.

ISAIAH BREED."

The original deed of purchase by these two individuals, and the deed of conveyance to fifty-one other persons, are both now in my possession.

The writer has charged me with burning the works of Shakspeare and Pope, from an impression that their writings have an immoral tendency. I did not burn them. Both the works to which he alludes are now in my library, with the following testimony of the Town Clerk and his lady, that they are the same copies.

"This may certify that we have this day seen the very copies of the Plays of William Shakspeare, and the Poetical Works of Alexander Pope, which Alonzo Lewis owned, when he boarded at our house, in the year 1817. SAMUEL HALLOWELL.

Lynn, December 16, 1826. LYDIA HALLOWELL."

His unprovoked attempt to cast an aspersion upon the faith of the Church, and his denial of the Resurrection, have sufficiently evinced the spirit which influenced him. St. Paul does not term them "fools," who believe in the resurrection of the body. He employs the strongest reasoning to prove that the body will rise. Indeed this faith was so clear to him, from the resurrection of Jesus Christ, his Lord and Master, that he seems to consider the matter beyond all dispute or doubt; and applies the term "fool" to the person who does not believe that God can as easily restore the body from the grave, as He can renew a plant from the seed, without destroying its identity. The resurrection of the body has been the hope of the good in all ages, from the pious Job, who said, "I know that though after my skin, worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God," to the humblest believer in the Gospel, who, after the numerous trials and ills of mortal life, lays down his body, in the sure and certain hope, in the words of Jesus himself, that God "will raise him up at the last day."

He has overlooked the tendency of his own reasoning, if it has any tendency. He says that the magistrates of Boston would not have permitted the removal of the remains of the dead, had it been improper; yet those magistrates are continually passing orders, the operation of which is in direct opposition to the opinions of his society.

The assertion that I have dealt "promiscuous satire" on all the modes of religious faith, is false. It is false that I have injured the sensibilities of any widow.

This is plain serious prose, and it is true. His essay is a piece of mock poetical sublimity, interspersed with imprecations, and gross personal invective, and it is not true.

Having corrected so many false statements, it is unnecessary to pursue the writer through all his misrepresentations. I have

no enmity against him, and have never made a personal allusion to him or any other individual ; though he has sought for years to injure my reputation, by means, which no man, possessing the finer feelings of humanity, would have employed. I cannot imagine why a person, who retains good understanding, should wish to deceive others. Deception can only originate from ignorance or depravity. A mind of discernment cannot easily deceive itself, and cannot expect to deceive that Being who has access to every thought of the heart. Falsehood and error may prevail for a time, and self-interest may profit, and self-love be gratified by their dominion ; but it is only a weak or a corrupt heart which exults in their delusion.

On Thursday, the twenty-third of June, immediately after the commencement of twilight, a remarkable sungush appeared. It proceeded from the place of sunsetting, and rose perfectly straight, perpendicular, and well-defined, to the height of twenty degrees. Its color was a beautiful bright red, and its width equal to that of a broad rainbow ; The clouds around were variegated with the finest colors, and the pageant continued about fifteen minutes.

On Saturday, September third, the first newspaper printed in Lynn, was published by Mr. Charles Frederic Lummus, with the title of the Lynn Weekly Mirror.

A comet was visible in October, on the right of the Pleiades, with a train about six degrees in length.

The Hon William Gray died at Boston, on the third of November, aged 75 years. He was born at Lynn, on the twenty seventh of June, 1750. His grandfather, Mr. William Gray, a respectable farmer, in 1701 resided on Water Hill, where the house of Mr. Benjamin Phillips now stands. His father, Mr. Abraham Gray, born 13 January, 1715, was one of the first shoe manufacturers in Lynn, who employed journeymen and apprentices. He received such an education as could at that time be obtained in a town school ; and, at the age of thirteen, having a strong inclination to mercantile pursuits, was placed in the counting house of Mr. Derby, a respectable merchant in Salem. As a reward for his faithfulness and diligence, he was indulged with the privilege of sending what are termed adventures, or articles of limited worth, at his own risk, in the ships of his employer ; and was generally so fortunate as to obtain returns of far increased value. On his arrival at manhood, he entered extensively into the European and East India trades, and by his industry, ability, and uncommon success, ac-



cumulated an amount of property which perhaps no individual in America has ever surpassed. His attachment to his native town induced him to confer benefits on many of its families, and to give employment to many of its inhabitants. His great success in trade gave an impulse to the mercantile business of Salem, which it might not otherwise have experienced; and the amount which he added to the prosperity of that ancient and respectable town, occasioned the following epigram.

“Salem and Lynn for Gray’s birth now contest;  
Lynn gains the palm, but Salem fares the best.”

After the embargo, Mr. Gray removed to Boston, and in the years 1810 and 1811, was elected Lieutenant Governor of the Commonwealth. His enterprise and integrity insured him high respect among merchants, and his benevolence and virtue obtained for him the gratitude of the poor, and the esteem of all. He had one daughter, Jerusha, and five sons who arrived to years of maturity. These are William R. Henry, Francis C. Esq. John C. Esq. and Horace; all of whom received an education at Harvard University. Three of them are merchants of good reputation, and two are eminent lawyers in the city of Boston.

The coldest day this year was Wednesday, December fourteenth, when the thermometer was eleven degrees below zero.

---

## 1826.

On Wednesday, the first of February, the thermometer was sixteen degrees below zero. Nearly two-thirds of the people of Lynn were sick with the influenza. This distemper prevailed throughout the United States, and extended to the isles of the Pacific Ocean.

On the twelfth of April, a schooner, loaded with about six hundred bushels corn, struck on a rock near the mouth of Saugus river, and sunk.

The Lynn institution for Savings was incorporated on the twentieth of June.

The festival of St. John, June 24, was celebrated by Mount Carmel, and five other lodges. An address was delivered in the first Methodist meeting house, by Caleb Cushing, Esquire, of Newburyport.

The Quaker meeting house in Boston, and the burial ground

adjoining, having been for some time disused, had fallen to decay. As none of the society remained in the city, the monthly meeting determined to remove the bones of the dead, and sell the land. The disinterment commenced on the twenty-eighth of June, and was finished on the sixth July. The remains of one hundred and eleven persons were taken up; of whom seventy-two were adults, and thirty-nine youth. The relics of one hundred and nine were put into six boxes, and conveyed to Lynn, and placed in the Quaker burial ground. Mr. Joseph Hussey, who had two sisters buried in Boston, was unwilling that they should be removed with the rest, and caused their remains, so dear to his memory, to be deposited in the cemetery of King's Chapel.

A Society for the promotion of Industry, Frugality, and Temperance, was organized on the twentieth of December.

---

## 1827.

Mr. Micajah Collins died on the thirtieth of January, at the age of 62 years. He was born on the nineteenth of April, 1764, married Hannah Chase of Salem, and left no children. He was, for nearly thirty years, a useful and respected school-master, and was much beloved by the pupils who attended his instructions. He was also, for some time, a minister of the society of Friends, and in that capacity, visited many of the meetings of Quakers throughout the United States. He was generally regarded as a peaceable citizen, and a virtuous man.

On the thirtieth of April, Mr. Paul Newhall was drowned from a fishing boat, at Swampscot, in attempting to pass Dread Ledge. His body was found uninjured, thirty-nine days after, having probably been caused to rise by heavy thunder, which agitated the water.

On the night of Thursday, May tenth, a schooner from Kennebec, loaded with hay and wood, was driven, by a storm, upon Lynn Beach, and dismasted.

Mr. Solomon Moulton died on the twenty-sixth of May, aged twenty years. He was the author of several pieces in the Lynn Mirror with the signature of Lilley. He was much esteemed for the purity of his character, the generosity of his disposition, the fervency of his friendship, and the evidence

which he gave of possessing poetical abilities, and his memory is affectionately cherished. To employ his own words—

Tis the last rite that man can do for man,  
When life is o'er, with kind and gentle hand,  
To lay his brother's body in the grave.

The anniversary of Independence was this year celebrated at Lynn. The rising sun was welcomed by a salute of twenty-four guns, from the summit of Estes' Hill, which was repeated at noon, and sunset, by the Lynn Artillery Company. A procession was formed at Mechanic's Hall, which passed, under the escort of the Lynn Rifle Company, to the eastern Methodist meeting house, which was elegantly decorated, by the ladies, with evergreens and flowers. In the procession was a company of twenty-four misses, belonging to the second district School, dressed in white, with wreaths of natural roses on their heads. They were in two sections; the first consisted of thirteen, representing the early states of the Union, bearing a white silk banner, with the words "Original States." The other section consisted of eleven, representing the younger sisters of the Union, bearing a banner with the inscription "New States." At the meeting house, they recited a responsive chorus, written for the purpose, which made a very pleasing impression. The Declaration of Independence was read by Mr. Samuel J. Ireson, and a beautiful ode was sung, written for the occasion by Mr. Enoch Curtin. Some remarks were made, by the author of this imperfect sketch, which the audience were pleased to term an oration.

Edwin Brown, aged 12 years, a son of Mr. Ezra Brown, was drowned, while bathing, near Sagamore Hill, on the eighth of July.

On Tuesday evening, August twenty eighth, a most beautiful pageant was displayed in the heavens. It took the form of an arch of bright light, which spanned the whole hemisphere from west to east. During the first part of the evening the northern lights were uncommonly luminous, and a light vapor was floating in the atmosphere. At half past nine, this vapor rose, and became sufficiently compact to receive the reflection of the Aurora, which formed a magnificent arch of flame-colored light. Its apparent breadth at the centre, was about twice the length of the Yard L, and the perspective caused it to appear narrower at the extremities. It continued in its splendor about an hour, and then gradually faded away. It resembled a path of fire across the heavens, and perhaps no one, who

did not behold it, can imagine its sublimity, perfection, and and brightness. On the night of the twenty fourth of September, the northern lights were also very bright, and on the following evening still more so; passing at one time in long streamers apparently into the southern hemisphere; and at another, flashing upon the low vapor like lightning, down to the very house tops. The eastern part of the horizon was so bright that it cast shadows.

The first Congregational meeting-house was moved from the Common on the eleventh of April. It was thoroughly repaired, with the addition of a new vestry and steeple, and dedicated on the seventeenth of October.

A great snow storm commenced on Wednesday, the seventh of November, and another on the following Wednesday with high wind, which drifted the snow; and the weather till the end of the month, continued colder than had been known at that season for many years.

---

## 1828.

A whale was brought on shore at Whale Beach, Swampscot, on the second of May. It was sixty feet in length, and twenty five barrels of oil were extracted from it.

The fourth of July was this year celebrated. An oration was delivered at the first Methodist meeting house, by the Rev. James Diman Green.

A code of By-Laws for the town, was approved by the court, on the eighth of July. They were principally designed to prevent irregular behaviour in the streets, and damage of public and private property.

The pastoral connexion of the Rev. James Diman Green with the second Congregational Society, was dissolved, at his request, on the fourth of August.

Flora, a black woman, died on the first of October, aged one hundred and fifteen years. She was born in Africa, where she had two husbands and five children. She related many interesting anecdotes of the customs of her tribe, particularly of their hunting the lions and great serpents. She said that she was a daughter of one of the principal men; and when one of their chiefs died, it was their practice to build a house over his

remains, as they considered it an indignity to his memory to suffer the rain to fall on his grave. One day, a party of slave dealers came, and set fire to their village, when the inhabitants fled. Her mother, she said, was unable to run fast, and as she was unwilling to escape without her, she remained, and was taken. Separated from some of her dearest friends, and from her children, she was brought to America, and after much suffering, arrived at Marblehead in 1748, where she fortunately became the property of a man who was disposed to treat her with kindness. She afterward married three other husbands and had five more children, before she came to Lynn. She was a sensible and pious woman, and retained her strength and her memory till a few days before her death. She daily knelt down in prayer; her words were simple, but plain and direct, and those who heard her felt as if they were in the presence of one who was talking with God. The tears were in her aged eyes as she spoke of her children and her native land. She said, "I have lived long, and suffered much. Oh, a great deal!—but He has been good to me. I love my merciful Father, and want to go and be with him." She was buried from the eastern Methodist meeting house, and her funeral was attended by many black people from the neighboring towns, and by a large concourse of white persons, by whom she was respected.

In a storm, on the twenty second of November, a schooner, belonging to Freeport, was cast upon the Lobster Rocks. The crew, with a lady passenger, immediately left the vessel, which was found in the morning, drifted upon Chelsea Beach.

The Lynn Lyceum was established on the twenty third of December.

---

## 1829.

One of the most beautiful appearances of nature was presented on the morning of Saturday, the tenth of January. A light rain had fallen on the preceeding evening, and when the sun rose, the whole expanse of hill and plain displayed the most enchanting and dazzling prospect of glittering frost. The tall and branching trees were bent, by the weight of ice, into graceful arches; and resembled magnificent chandeliers, glittering with burnished silver. Each branch and twig was covered with crystal, which glowed with such lustre in the

morning light, that the eye could scarce sustain the brilliancy. The tops and sides of the houses were plated as with the purest silver, and the herbage in the fields presented the appearance of fancy work, formed of glass and gems. As far as the eye could reach, all was one resplendent surface of polished ice; and in some places, the trees which stood in colonnades, were bent till their tops touched together, and formed long arcades of crystal, decorated with brilliant pearls, and sparkling with reflected light. Each branch bent heavily with the weight of its transparent covering of ice; and as they were gently moved by the light breeze, every twig twinkled in the sun, like a clustre of diamonds.

But the scene in the open village, although so highly beautiful, was far exceeded by the magnificent lustre of the woods. It was there that nature wrought with all her power, and displayed her skill in all its beauty. The majestic hemlocks bent their heavy branches to the ground, loaded as with a weight of gold, and formed delightful bowers, sparkling with gems, and illuminated with colored light. The evergreen cedars, that stood thick between, were covered with crystal gold, and glowed with emeralds of the deepest green. The silver tops of the graceful birches crossed each other, like the gothic arches of some splendid structure, built by Nature herself for the worship of Omnipotence; while the slender shafts, and the glittering rocks, resembled columns, and altars, and thrones; and the precipitous cliffs looked down, like towers and battlements of silver; and far above all, the tall pines stood up, and glittered in the frosty air, like the spires of a thousand cathedrals, overlaid with transparent gold, and burnished by the cloudless sun.

This beautiful and surprising exhibition continued undisturbed for two whole days. On the third morning, the warm fingers of Aurora found the frozen chords which upheld the glittering show. They severed at the touch—and down from lofty spire and stately elm, came showering gems and pearls, that tinkled as they bounded on the crystal plain. The ice which had confined the mighty arms of aged forest trees, came crashing down, breaking the frosted shrubs beneath, and sending through the woods a mingled sound, like falling towers, and the far dash of waters. The admirer of the works of nature, who, during the continuance of this beautiful scene, was in the majestic woods, will never forget their indescribable splendor, or doubt the power and skill of Him, who, with such slight means as the twilight vapor, and the midnight rain, can form

an arch of fire in heaven ; or create an exhibition of glory and grandeur on earth, so far surpassing the utmost beauty of the works of man.

In a snow storm, on the sixth of February, a woman perished on Farrington's Hill, on the turnpike, one mile eastward of the Lynn Hotel. Another great storm commenced on the twentieth, when several vessels, belonging to Swampscot, were driven out to sea. One of them remained five days, and went on shore at Chatham, where the crew were much frozen. The greatest degree of cold, this year was on Monday, the fifth of February, when the thermometer was six degrees below zero.

On the night of the fifth of March, a schooner, loaded with coffee, struck on Shag Rocks, on the south side of Nahant, and was entirely dashed to pieces. No traces of the crew were found, and it is probable that they all perished.

Dr. John Flagg Gardner died at Ipswich on the fourteenth of March, aged thirty-five years. He was a son of Dr. James Gardner of Lynn, and was born 27 May, 1794. He graduated at Harvard University in 1813, and after completing his studies with his father, and at the medical school in Boston, he settled in the practice of medicine at Ipswich. He was esteemed for his ability as a physician, and beloved for his disposition as a gentleman.

Great excitement was occasioned this year in Lynn, as it had been in many other towns for some years previous, by the disclosures respecting Freemasonry. On the first of April, Mr. Jacob Allen of Braintree, gave an exhibition of some of the alleged mysteries of that institution, at Liberty Hall ; and on the sixth, the inhabitants, in town meeting, voted, that they regarded Freemasonry "as a great moral evil," and its existence "as being dangerous to all free governments," and gave Mr. Allen the use of the town Hall to continue his exhibitions.

The canker worms, for seven years, have been making great ravages among the fruit trees. Many orchards have borne but little fruit during that time, and the leaves and blossoms have been so thoroughly devoured, that the trees have appeared as if scorched by a fire.

In a very great thunder shower on the thirtieth of July, a barn on Nahant was struck by lightning, and Mr. William Hogan, a carpenter was killed.

In September, a stone beacon, twenty feet in height, was erected on the outer cliff of Dread Ledge, by order of the United States' government, at an expense of one thousand dollars. It was thrown down by a storm, on the thirty-first of October.

On the twelfth of October, at seven o'clock in the evening, a brilliant meteor appeared in the south-east.

Mr. Joseph Fuller died on the seventh of November, aged 82 years. He was a patriotic citizen and a benevolent man. He was for several years a selectman, and in 1820 was chosen a delegate to amend the state constitution. His son, Hon. Joseph Fuller, was born 29 March, 1772, and died in 1815, aged 43 years. He was six times chosen representative, and was elected a senator for Essex county in 1812. He was also the first President of the Lynn Mechanics' Bank, and an associate Judge of the Court of Sessions.

Mr. David Hatch Barlow was ordained minister of the Second Congregational Society, on the ninth of December.

The town tax this year was 8500 dollars; of which 3200 dollars were appropriated for the support of Schools. The number of ratable polls was 1457, and the voters 1276. The number of marriages was fifty four, and the births were two hundred and forty three. The deaths were ninety seven of whom twenty were of the following ages; 71, 87, 60, 87, 80, 88, 73, 64, 87, 69, 70, 68, 76, 86, 75, 82, 63, 64, 72, 83; making in all 1505, or an average of 75 years; probably a greater number of persons than ever before died in the town in one year. There are now ninety four persons living more than seventy years of age. The oldest person is Mrs. Hannah Hudson, whose age is ninety one years.

We have thus passed through two hundred years of the annals of Lynn. The thirtieth of June, 1829, completed the second century, since the first known settlement of white men was made in the town. Could the men of that early day return to the place of their ancient forest, how would they be surprised to find it traversed by beautiful streets, filled with neat houses, and inhabited by thousands of their happy descendants, whose children sleep undisturbed, where theirs were frightened in the day time by companies of Indians, and alarmed at night by troops of wolves, trotting by the doors of their cottages! How would they be pleased to see Nahant, which was once the portion of foxes, now bright with beautiful dwellings, furnished with every accommodation of comfort and pleasure, and visited from afar by the best and fairest of the land.

---



## DESCRIPTION OF LYNN.

---

LYNN is pleasantly situated on the northern shore of Massachusetts Bay ; and is bounded on the west by Saugus river and town, on the north by Lynnfield and Danvers, and on the northeast by Salem. It is the oldest town, excepting Salem, in Essex county, and the fifth in population. It contains 6150 inhabitants ; the increase for the last ten years having been one hundred and sixty-three annually. Since its settlement, in 1629, ten towns, containing twenty-six churches, and more than twenty thousand inhabitants, have derived their origin from the same source. These towns are, Lynn, Saugus, Lynnfield, Reading, South Reading, Sandwich, and Yarmouth, in Massachusetts ; Hampton and Amherst in New-Hampshire ; and Southampton on Long Island.

Lynn is nine miles northeast of Boston, and five southwest from Salem. Its length is nearly six miles on the sea coast, and it extends about four miles into the woods. From the centre of the southern side, a beach of sand projects into the sea nearly two miles, and terminates in a peninsula, called Nahant, which would otherwise be an island. The whole town somewhat resembles a triangle, with a pendulum suspended from the base. It contains 9360 acres. The southeastern part is a tract of excellent salt marsh ; and the northern part is a range of woodland and pasture. The inhabited part of the town is an extensive plain, gently undulating, toward the extremities, into graceful elevations, skirted on the south by the sea, and defended on the north by a range of rocky hills. Near the centre is a beautiful common, three fourths of a mile in length, containing twenty-one acres.

Within the limits of the town are eight ponds, some of which are large, and contain an unfailing supply for several mills.

The river Saugus has its source in Reading pond, about eight miles from the sea. For the first half of its course, it is only sufficient for a mill stream, but becomes wider toward its mouth, where it is about six hundred feet in breadth. It is very irregular in its course, winding in numerous circumvolutions, and flowing three miles in the distance of one. In several places, after taking a circuitous route of half a mile, it returns to within a few rods of the place whence it deviated. The harbor is formed by marshes on one side, and by the beach on the other, and is only sufficient for small vessels. A turnpike from Salem to Boston passes through the centre of the town, on which are two bridges. One is a draw-bridge over Saugus river, 540 feet in length. The other is a floating bridge, across a pond, in the eastern part of the town. It is 500 feet in length composed of timber and plank, resting on the surface, and rising and falling with every increase and diminution of the water. It is a curiosity, and reminds one of the Persian's bridge of boats across the Hellespont.

A large portion of the inhabited part of the town, between the hills and the sea, is alluvion, formed of alternate strata of clay, sand, and gravel, chiefly covered with vegetable soil. In some parts the gravel and sand predominate, and in others the clay. Extensive beds of clay have been opened in several parts of the town and wrought into bricks. A manufacture of pottery, from the finer kinds of this clay, was some years since begun in Saugus, and continued for some time with good success. An alluvion commences at King's Beach, and passes up Stacey's Brook, through Graves End, into the northern part of the town. A stratum of clay, several inches in thickness, belonging to this alluvion, rests upon the sand of King's Beach, beyond the line of low water. The numerous beaches on the shore of the town, and around Nahant, are an alluvial deposite of fine, siliceous, whitish grey sand, covered, in some places, with long ridges of pebbles. Marl is found, but not in large quantities. This is a substance composed of carbonate of lime and clay, and is valuable for its power of enriching certain soils, when mixed with them. There are

several fine meadows of peat, both fibrous and compact. This is a formation of the stems, leaves, and roots of vegetables, more or less decomposed, and intermixed with earth. The meadows where it is formed, were formerly ponds. It is dug by a kind of long spade, which cuts it into regular solids, about three inches square, and two feet in length. It is then piled and dried for fuel, and produces a constant and intense heat. The cavities whence it is taken are soon filled with water, and in a series of years, are again stocked with a new formation of peat. A meadow between Orange and Chatham streets, contains an alluvial deposit of rich, black soil, more than twelve feet deep. In digging to the depth of three feet, the trunk of a large oak was found; and at the depth of six feet, a stratum of leaves and burnt wood was discovered.

The northern part of the town abounds with rocky hills. The principal rocks are porphyry, greenstone, and sienite. Porphyry commences at Red Rock, near the Long Beach, and passing through the town in a gentle curve, towards the northwest, forms a range of hills, including High Rock, Lover's Leap, and Sadler's Rock, and continues though Saugus. It is composed of petrosilex, feldspar, and quartz. Its color is commonly reddish, in some instances quite red, and in others brownish or gray. The term, porphyry, is derived from a Greek word, signifying purple. It gives fire with steel, and is susceptible of a high polish. The best specimens are equal in beauty to the porphyry of the ancients. The porphyry of Nahant is of darker color, approaching to black. Specimens of clinkstone porphyry are found, which, when struck, give out a metallic sound. Greenstone composes hills in the eastern part of the town, and is separated from porphyry by Stacey's Brook. It is of a greenish color, composed of hornblende and feldspar. Sienite is found in the northern part of the town, in Lynnfield, and on Nahant. It is composed of feldspar, hornblende, and quartz, and its color is gray, or reddish white. It has its name from Siena, a city of Egypt, whence it was obtained by the ancients, for the purposes of

architecture. It is found in great variety, from very fine to very coarse, and is sometimes disintegrated into gravel and sand. It is much used for building, and for millstones. From the presence of magnetic iron ore, it frequently attracts the magnet. Granite occurs in roundish masses, and is composed of grains of feldspar, quartz, and mica. It is not so abundant as formerly, the best specimens having been used for building. Gneiss is found on Nahant. Puddingstone occurs on the beaches, and in other places. It is composed of oval pebbles, about the size of a full raisin, united by a flinty cement, and bears some resemblance to plumpudding, from which it has its name.

Various minerals occur in the town. One of the most frequent is Petrosilex. It is of different colors, and is found either by itself, or constituting the basis of porphyry. Egg Rock, some of the ledges at Nahant and Swampscot, and the most common pebbles on the beaches, are petrosilex. Feldspar is found at Nahant, in separate masses, and sometimes finely crystallized. It is also freely disseminated through formation rocks. Quartz is abundant, especially at Nahant. It is there finely crystallized into regular six sided prisms, terminated by six sided pyramids, as correctly shaped as if formed by the hand of an artist. Some of the crystals are from three to six inches in length and half an inch in diameter, very hard, white, and translucent. They are sometimes found in clusters, interwoven like the roots of a tree. Quartz is frequently found in beautiful, white, polished, semitransparent pebbles, on the beaches. It also occurs in veins, and disseminated through formation rocks. Its color is sometimes yellow. Prase, is found at Nahant. Hornstone occurs on the west of High Rock. Prehnite is found at Nahant, of the fibrous variety, and of green color. Epidote, of a beautiful green, and sometimes finely crystallized, is found at Nahant, in great abundance. It traverses sienite, greenstone, and petrosilex in veins, of various thickness. Hornblende forms cliffs and ledges on Nahant. A curious vein of hornblende two inches in thick-

ness, passes through a ledge on the northern shore of Nahant, for a distance of about two hundred feet, in a direction from southeast to northwest. Argillaceous slate occurs at Nahant. Manganese and Sulphuret of Copper are found in Lynn, and fine specimens of Antimony in Saugus. A mine of Iron Ore was formerly wrought in Saugus, and Iron still exists there. Shale, which is a strong indication of coal, has been observed, and the earth has been opened at Nahant and other places, in consequence but no coal has yet been discovered. Carbonate of Lime is found. The shells on the beaches are of this substance, and were formerly burned to obtain lime for making mortar. Fine specimens of Chalcedony, of a milk white color, have been found at Nahant, in pebbles on the beaches. Jasper occurs in several places. There is a rock of this mineral near the river, in Saugus; and a beautiful specimen of deep red Jasper, traversed by fine veins of blue chalcedony, has been discovered at Swampscot. It is susceptible of a very fine polish, and may be manufactured into seals, pendants, and other ornaments. The Indians commonly formed the heads of their arrows of Jasper and Porphyry.

Lynn contains a great variety of plants, "from the cedar to the hyssop." The principal trees are white and pitch Pine, which cover many acres, and fill large swamps. The next in abundance are red and White Cedar. The white grows on low grounds, the red on hills, and is peculiarly valuable for posts, being very durable. It is seldom found of large growth, being usually cut down when it attains a diameter of about eight inches. It formerly was permitted to grow very large. I have seen cedars of the ancient growth more than three feet in diameter. There are also white, black, and red Oak, Walnut, Maple, Sycamore, Elm, Locust, Hornbeam, Lime, Hemlock, Spruce, Ash, Birch, Willow, Catalpa, Alder, Wild Cherry, Plum, and others. The tree which attains the greatest size, is the Sycamore, or buttonwood. The largest of this kind now standing in the town, are two sycamores at the gate of Lewis Place, in Boston-street, eighty feet in height, and eleven

in circumference. The largest Elm is in Nahant-street, sixty-four feet in height, and fourteen in circumference. The Great Oak in Essex-street, is fifty feet in height, and nine in circumference. One of the most common shrubs is the Barberry.—The root is used for giving a yellow color to morocco leather, and many tons are annually dug for that purpose. The fruit, which is bright red, grows in clusters, and is valuable as a preserve. The flowers of this shrub are extremely sensitive.—When they are fully expanded, if the inside of the filament be touched with a straw, it instantly contracts with violence.—Many tons of Sumach are annually gathered, and employed in the manufacture of morocco leather. Whortleberries are very plenty, and most other berries are common. Probably more than one hundred barrels are gathered annually. Grapes are found in the woods, and the vines might be easily cultivated. The Sea Pea grows at Nahant. The town presents an excellent field for the Botanist. Most plants, common to this region, are found here, and many of foreign origin are cultivated. I have observed more than three hundred kinds, among which are some of the valuable shrubs so highly esteemed by the Indians, for their medicinal properties.

The wild animals with which our forests were formerly filled, have nearly all disappeared. The wolf has departed, and the red deer is gone. The bear is not seen in his ancient solitudes, and the catamount no longer springs on the defenceless wanderer in the woods. Sometimes a wild-cat comes from his sterile haunts to the sea-shore for food, but the gunner seldom suffers him to return. One of these animals was observed, a few years since, lurking around Red Rock, and was shot by a sportsman, after a desperate attempt to escape. In 1813, a large number of raccoons were driven, by the war, from the woods on the northern frontiers, and came down towards the sea. Several of them repaired to Swampscot, where they were soon killed. Almost the only animal now found in the woods, is the harmless squirrel. Sometimes a timid rabbit darts from the bushes,

Or the wild fox appears, in momentary view ;

but with the exception of a few serpents, the woods are unmo-  
lested, and the child may sleep in the shadow of the pines  
without fear.

The wild doves continue to make their annual visits, but  
their flocks appear smaller every year. Instead of darkening  
the air, as formerly, by their numbers, the sportsman can sel-  
dom find enough to compensate his time. The waters con-  
tinue to be filled with fish, as in the days when the Indian  
caught them in his bark canoe. The fishing business is chiefly  
followed at the village called Swampscot, in the eastern part of  
the town. About one hundred men are employed, and more  
than one thousand tons of fish, of various kinds, are taken an-  
nually. The brooks are frequented by alewives, of which  
several hundred barrels are gathered each year. Forty bar-  
rels have been taken in a seine, at one time, in Saugus river.  
The fish called nippers, are taken with a rod and line from the  
rocks at Nahant. In the coves around Nahant, the singular  
animal called the sea-anemone or rosefish, is found. They  
appear to possess the combined properties of an animal and a  
vegetable. They grow, in great numbers, commonly in clus-  
ters, in the salt water pools, between those rocks which are  
covered at high tide. They are a dark green pulpy substance,  
adhering closely to the rocks. When fully expanded, they  
present a cylindrical form, from one to three inches in diame-  
ter, and from four to twelve inches in length, with an unfolded  
top, somewhat resembling a rose, in the centre of which is the  
mouth, and from the sides of which, fine soft antennæ, or  
branches, are thrown out, in all directions, and kept continually  
in motion. When touched, the living flower suddenly draws in  
all its feelers, closes its leaves, and shrinks close to the rock,  
where it remains in the form of an oblate sphere, somewhat  
resembling an onion. Those who search for this curious pro-  
duction of nature, may find it at the eastern extremity of Na-  
hant, among the rocks, at low water.

In the slight glance at animated existence, which a work of  
this kind will admit, I cannot overlook the firefly, with which

our meadows are so beautifully illuminated every summer evening. I have stood for hours to gaze with admiration on thousands of these charming creatures, pursuing their evening sports, and apparently taking ineffable delight in illuminating the gloom with their phosphoric radiance. One of these little creatures, in the most perfect darkness, will emit sufficient light to read the finest print. They appear to possess the extraordinary power of extracting the luminous fluid from the atmosphere, which they secrete in the viscera, and conceal or exhibit at pleasure. Wonderful creatures!—how admirable is your structure!—with what delight do you inspire us! How strong is the proof you convey to us, of the inexhaustible resources, and the intelligent goodness of the Creator! Who, that lives in the days when science has shed her light through every department of nature—who, that has observed with an attentive eye, and a perceptive mind, the operations of Providence in all his works, from the most magnificent to the most minute—from the entire worlds and systems, which roll through boundless space, to the little bird that declares his omnipotence from the shadowy branches—can doubt the power, the knowledge, or the goodness of God?

A considerable degree of attention is given to agriculture. The farmers have much improved their lands by cultivation, and by procuring seaweed and rockweed from the beaches for manure. These substances have been freely mingled with the soil, and since their use, the crops of English grass have been increased in nearly a tenfold proportion. The other principal products are, Indian corn, barley, and the common vegetables. Wheat and rye are sometime sown, but they are usually blighted. The cold and damp sea breezes, which frequently prevail, have an unfavorable effect; and the soil appears to be uncongenial to the finer sorts of grain. The sandy surface naturally produces sorrel, and the gravelly barberry bush. The low lands in the woods furnish grapes, the meadows are filled with cranberries, and the marshes with samphire; and the soil generally appears to be adapted to the production of those



plants which contain the greatest degree of acid. This acidulous quality of the soil, probably renders it unfit for the culture of wheat.

Springs are frequent, and some of them uncommonly cold and pure. Many springs gush up beneath the water in ponds, and the edge of the sea. Several of the best are below the level of the tide, from which they are defended; and one of them is covered twice a day with salt water. The wells are usually dug from fifteen to thirty feet, and the town is well supplied with wholesome water. A Mineral Spring is found near the eastern border of the town, on the margin of a pond. It possesses aperient and antiscorbutic qualities, and has a strong taste of iron. A handsome hotel has been erected near it, which is visited by invalids and parties of pleasure.

The eminences, in different parts of the town, afford a variety of pleasant prospects. High Rock, is in the centre, one hundred and eighty feet in height, and overlooks the principal part of the town, with Nahant. It also furnishes a view of a large portion of Massachusetts Bay, with many of the towns on its shore. About half a mile north of the Lynn Hotel, is a beautiful and romantic elevation, called Lovers Leap. It is a precipitous rock, sixty feet in height, on the side of a hill, surrounded by tall trees. It forms the termination of a pleasant promenade, and affords a beautiful prospect. Half a mile further west is Pine Hill, one of the highest eminences in the town; from the top of which, with a good glass, a most delightful panorama is exhibited, of all the towns on the shore of Massachusetts Bay, from Marblehead to Scituate. The blue top of Monadnoc is also seen, towering alone in the north. At the southwestern extremity of Pine Hill, is Sadler's Rock, so named from one of the early settlers, who lived at its foot. A small distance towards the north, is a rock which has been struck by lightning. A solid piece of the rock, about three tons in weight, was split off by the lightning, and thrown nearly two hundred feet, to the foot of the hill, where it lay for many years. The place from which it was severed, and the deep

channel of the bolt down the side of the rock, are still to be seen. A few rods from this, where the road is crossed by Beaver Brook, is a flat rock, imbedded in the earth, over which the wheel of the carriage passes, in which is impressed the perfect print of a Cow's foot, as correctly shaped, as if it had been made by the animal. A detached stone, which lies near, has the impress of a child's feet, deep and legible. About one mile further, toward the north west, is a solitary hill in the woods, called the Lantern. A short distance from this is a cavern in a rock, on the side of a hill, called the Pirate's Dungeon. It is the place where a pirate, named Thomas Veal, in the early history of the town, fixed his abode. It was thrown down by an earthquake, in 1658. Before that time, it is said to have been a spacious cavern, but now the aperture is only about five feet in height, and extends only fifteen feet into the rock. The needle is very strongly attracted around this rock, either by the presence of magnetic iron ore, or some metallic substance, buried in its interior. In the northern part of the town is Sunadin Rock, which furnishes a view of Monadnoc and Wachusett, with the chain of the Green Mountains for nearly two hundred miles.

There are twenty one beaches on the shores of Lynn and Nahant, beside numerous coves and inlets. Great quantities of sea plants, are thrown upon these beaches by every storm, and gathered by the farmers, for the enrichment of their lands. Beginning at the south eastern extremity of the town, you pass over Phillips Beach, which is one mile in length. On the northern side is a large pond, and at the western end is Phillips Point, jutting out abruptly into the water, and forming a fine fishing stand. A little further toward the west, is Dread Ledge, running far out into the sea, to the great danger of vessels passing near the shore. Half a mile from this is Whale Beach, ninety rods in length, in the centre of which is Lady Susan's Rock. The best panoramic view of Nahant is obtained from the eastern extremity of this beach, where the majestic promontory is seen, reaching out into the ocean at its full extent. At





NANTANT HOTEL.

the western end is Fishing Point, which affords accommodations for parties of pleasure. North west of this, is Blaney's Beach, one hundred and six rods in length, on which immense numbers of fish are landed, by the boats which are kept in constant employment by the inhabitants of the village of Swampscot. Next to this is King's Beach, two hundred and twenty-six rods in length, extending from Black Will's Cliff on the east, to Red Rock on the west.

Nahant is a peninsula on the south of Lynn. In the beauty and sublimity of its scenery, combined with its peculiar advantages of health and pleasure, it is not surpassed by any place on the coast of America. It consists of two, elevated, rock-engirdled islands, called Great and Little Nahants, united together by a beach, half a mile in length, and connected to the main land by another beach, one mile and a half in length. From the centre of the town, the Long Beach projects directly into the sea, and is washed by the waves of the great ocean on the eastern side, and on the western by the waters of the harbor. It is a gently curving bar, of fine, silvery, gray sand, rising so high in the centre as generally to prevent the waves from passing over it, and almost imperceptibly sloping to the water on each side. It is unbroken by land, or rock, or shrub, for its whole extent, and the broad ridge of dry sand, which passes through its centre, is interspersed with shells, and pebbles, and fragments of coral and other substances, which the storms have cast upon it, among which the white gull lays her spotted eggs, in little cavities scooped in the sand, and soaring overhead, startles the traveller by her shrilling shriek. The portion of the beach which is left by the tide, is broad enough for fifty carriages to pass abreast, and presents a perfectly smooth surface of pure, fine sand, beaten hard and polished by the constant breaking of the waves, on which the horse's hoof leaves no print, and the wheel passes, without sound or trace, like a velvet roller on marble. The hard sand frequently retains sufficient water, for an hour after the tide has left it, to give it the appearance of glass, in which objects are reflected as in a

mirror. It is one of the purest delights of existence to ride there. When the animated horse passes swiftly along, with his mane blown out by the strong sea breeze, and his feet rapidly touching the sand, his perfect image is reflected beneath, with a corresponding motion, like a shadowy spirit travelling below, with his visionary mane floating on the unreal breeze, and the clouds deeply pictured beyond, like things of another world. When the strong west wind blows, this beautiful appearance is broken, the dry sand of the ridge is put in motion, and is seen swiftly flitting in white streaks, like little rivulets, towards the edge of sea, rendering the traveller dizzy by their variable and rapid motion. The exact length of the beach, measuring on the curve of high water, is 514 rods, which is somewhat more than one mile and a half. The ridge of dry sand and pebbles is twenty eight rods wide, and the tide flows out thirty two rods. The beach was formerly further toward the east, and nearer a straight line than it now is. Within the memory of persons yet living, it has changed nearly half its breadth, and after great storms, a part of the marsh, which was formerly all on the western side, has appeared beneath the loose sand on the eastern side. I have seen stumps of trees on the seaside, which never could have grown there, had the soil always been sand, exposed to the action of the tide. A rock, formerly in the harbor, round which the birds used to dive, is now entirely covered by the sand. Should the beach ever be broken, the harbor will be destroyed, and the sea will beat directly upon the wharves. To prevent this, a sea guard, 274 rods in length, has been constructed of planks and sand, on that part of the ridge nearest Nahant; but it has not always been found sufficient to resist the enormous power of the waves. In a great storm, on the sixteenth of February, 1757, two merchant vessels, from London, valued at one hundred thousand pounds sterling, were wrecked upon this beach.

Little Nahant is a hill, consisting of two graceful elevations, rising eighty feet above the sea, and defended by battlements of rock, from twenty to sixty feet in height. It is about half a

mile in length, and contains forty two acres, seventeen of which are in good cultivation. Passing along the northern shore, you come to a deep cavern, high up in the rock, above the water, called the Wolf's Cavern, where swallows now build their nests. The southeastern extremity is a precipitous rock, towering sixty feet perpendicularly above the tide. While looking down upon the sea, as it was dashing its heavy waves against the base of this cliff, I was reminded of the Bard of Gray, when he stood alone

On a rock, whose haughty brow  
Frowns o'er old Conway's foaming flood.

Proceeding toward the west, you come to Fox Cavern, a deep fissure in the cliff, across which is a natural rock bridge, through which the water rushes in a beautiful manner. Near this is the Great Furnace, a chasm in the rock, fifty feet deep, and twenty feet wide, in which, during an easterly storm, the water dashes and boils with astonishing fury. Next to this is the Grotto, thirty six feet in height, covered by a large flat stone. It is open to the sea, which enters it at high water. A short distance from this is a fissure, called the Little Furnace. It extends into the land nearly two hundred feet, and is about thirty feet deep. The sides are perpendicular, between which the waves are driven with great fury, and recede over the loose pebbles, with a hoarse murmur, as if angry at their temporary imprisonment. The western end of this island, is a bluff, thirty feet in height, and almost perpendicular, near the edge of which the road passes. The Nahant Beach, which connects the two islands, is one hundred and seventy rods in length, and is nearly equal, in breadth and beauty, to that which unites them with the town.

The outer portion of the peninsula, called Great Nahant, is about two miles in length, and in some parts half a mile broad, containing four hundred and sixty-three acres. The surface is uneven, rising into elevations, from forty to one hundred feet above the level of the sea. The shores are extremely irregular, being composed, in many places, of huge precipitous rocks.

in some places resembling iron, rising from twenty to sixty feet above the tide, with a great depth of water below; and in others, stretching out into beautiful beaches, or curving into delightful recesses, and coves filled with pebbles, of every variety of form and color, from burning red to stainless white. The whole outline presents the most agreeable interchange of scenery, from the low beach, that glistens beneath the thin edge of the wave, to lofty precipices, and majestic cliffs that rise,

Like moonlight battlements, and towers decayed by time.

Passing along the northern shore you come to a cliff forty feet perpendicular, called John's Peril. Many years ago, a person named John Breed, attempted to drive his team between a high rock on the hill and this cliff. Finding the danger of such a hazardous undertaking, he had but just time to unbind his oxen, when the cart went over the edge of the cliff, into the rocky chasm beneath, and was dashed into a hundred pieces. About one quarter of a mile eastward from this is a remarkably cold spring, into which the sun never shone. It flows from an aperture under the cliff, above the reach of the tide. One of the early inhabitants of Nahant, being sick, one day asked for water, which was denied him. Watching an opportunity, he escaped from his bed, and ran about a mile, to this spring, from which he drank as much water as he wanted, and immediately recovered. Proceeding over Stoney Beach you come to a black ledge, called Iron Mine, in which is an opening, like a tunnel, nearly thirty feet deep, called the Dashing Rock, into which the water is sometimes forced and thrown upward, with great power and fury. A singular vein, about two inches in thickness, runs across the whole of this ledge in a straight line. It appears as if the rock had been split by a convulsion, and the rent filled by some melted substance, which hardened as it cooled. In the great cliff on the eastern side of Lindsey's Hill, is the Spouting Horn. It is a winding fissure, in the lower projecting bed of the cliff, passing into a deep cavern under the rock, which rises sixty feet above,



nearly perpendicular. The water is driven, for about one hundred feet, between two walls of rock, twenty feet apart, and is then forced into the cavern, about thirty feet, with great violence, from which it returns in spray and white foam. During a great easterly storm, at about half tide, when the waves are coming in with all their power, the water is driven into this opening with a tremendous force, that seems to jar the foundations of the solid rock, and each wave sounds like subterranean thunder. Towards the southeast, Saunders' Ledge stretches far into the sea, on the right of which is Rose Fish Cove, where, in the little mossy pools, at low water, the sea anemone may be found in great numbers. Passing over Hood's Point, and Bass Beach, you come to Cedar Point, one of the most pleasant headlands on the island. On the south is Canoe Beach, and beyond this, a cliff of irregular rocks, the principal of which is Bennett's Head. The extremity of the promontory is called East Point. It is in latitude  $42^{\circ} 26'$  North, and longitude  $6^{\circ} 8'$  East.

Returning on the southern side, over a long cliff, the eye rests on a Natural Bridge thrown across a deep fissure; and beyond this is a tall rock, standing alone in the tide, called Pulpit Rock. Westward a lofty cliff projects, in which there is a curious recess, called the Swallow's Cave. Descending a steep gravelly bank, the path suddenly opens on a massy ledge, through which the cavern passes. The entrance is five feet high, and ten feet wide; after a few steps, the passage increases to fourteen feet in breadth, and twenty in height. Toward the centre it becomes narrower, and at the distance of seventy-two feet from the entrance, it opens into the sea.—Through this cavern the water rushes at high tide, with great fury and reverberation, and at low water it is left open to the inspection of the curious. Great numbers of swallows inhabit this cavern, in the summer season, and build their nests in the upper part, where they entertain visitors by their busy chattering. South of the Swallows' Cliff is Pea Island, an irregular

rock, about thirty rods broad, on which the sea pea grows. It is joined to the Swallows' Cliff by a beach, thirteen rods long, over which the water flows at high tide. Southeast of Pea Island, are two large ledges rising above the water, called Shag Rocks, on which several vessels have been wrecked. On the west of the Swallows' Cove, is a beautiful arch in the rock, beneath the cliff, called the Grotto. Westward of this is Josephs' Beach, sometimes called Pearl Beach, sixty eight rods in length, terminating at Bass Rock. Beyond, is Curlew Beach, sixty rods in length, extending to Nipper Stage. Next is Crystal Beach, forty six rods in length, where crystals of quartz have been found in abundance. Northwest of this, Dorothy's Cove forms a majestic curve of one hundred rods, to Rock Point, from which Pond Beach stretches out one hundred and forty rods, bounded by a long ridge of beautiful pebbles, which separates it from Bear Pond. On the southwest, Bayley's Hill rises one hundred feet above the sea, on the west of which are two fine ranges of sand, called Lewis Beach and Coral Beach. Beyond these, the majestic promontory of Bass Point extends into the sea, and forms the southwestern extremity of Nahant. On the north are Reed Cove and West Cliff, from which Johnson's Beach extends forty six rods, and the western shore is terminated by an abrupt cliff, called Black Rock; from which the beach is unbroken for more than two miles.

On the south of Nahant, at some distance from the shore, is a rock, covered at high water, called Sunk Rock. On the western side, is a cluster of rocks, discernable at low water, called the Lobster Rocks; and westward of these is Sloop Rock; all or which are dangerous to vessels entering the harbor. On the east of Nahant, at the distance of three fourths of a mile, is a white rock, rising one hundred feet above the sea, called Egg Rock. Great numbers of gulls, and other sea-birds lay their eggs upon it; and it is sometimes used as a pasture for sheep. It contains about three acres, and belongs to Salem.

Nahant is much visited by persons for the improvement of health, and by parties of pleasure, from the neighbouring towns, for whom it furnishes every accommodation. Two steam boats are constantly running from Boston during the pleasant season, but a ride by land, over the beaches, is much more delightful. A spacious and elegant hotel has been erected, of stone, near the eastern extremity. It contains nearly a hundred rooms, and is surrounded by a double piazza, commanding the most delightful prospects. Several other hotels and boarding houses are situated in the village, and about twenty beautiful cottages, the summer residence of gentlemen of fortune, are scattered over the peninsula. There is also a neat stone building erected for a chapel, which serves for a library and school room.

The air of Nahant is uncommonly pure and exhilarating; and is generally regarded as conducive to the highest degree of health. The whole scenery is delightful, and is worth going a thousand miles to view. On the north is the beautiful town of Lynn, with its white houses, its green trees, and its hills of porphyry—the pleasant village of Swampscot, with its cluster of slender masts, and its beach covered with boats—the high land of Marblehead, stretching far to the east—Baker's Island, with its light house—and Egg Rock, standing alone, like a fortress in the sea. On the west is Bunker Hill, with its monument of rock—the majestic dome and the lofty spires of Boston—the whole range of towns along the coast, for more than forty miles—the beautiful green islands, with the forts and the lighthouses, in the bay of Boston—and, far beyond all, the Blue Hills, softly mingling with the sky. On the southeast you have the Ocean, the vast, the deep, the interminable Ocean—stretching out in its endless magnificence. In a calm day, you may sit upon the rocks, and watch the ground swell coming in for miles, slowly upheaving the surface of the liquid plain, and then depressing it with as gentle an undulation, as if Ocean were indeed a living thing slumbering with heavy breath. Far beyond, at the edge of the blue horizon, you behold a long line of ships, with their white sails gleaming in the sun, tracing their path across the

majestic deep. At a little distance from the shore is a row of huge porpoises, rolling and tumbling after each other, and breaking the uniformity of the water by their rude gambols. At about the same distance, sit a flock of black ducks, silently rising and sinking with every motion of the tide. On the smooth sands of the beach, the edge of the sea terminates in a white line, constantly broken, and as constantly renewed, gently rolling the pebbles, and tinkling the shells with a light and silvery cadence. Along the rough edges of the cliff, the waves break in hoarser murmurs, dashing among the rocks, waving the blue flowery tops of the green sea plants in the pools between, and gliding over the shelving projections of the ledge in fanciful cascades. He who frequents the shore will observe, that every ninth wave runs farther upon the beach, and breaks with more force upon the rocks, than the preceeding. This appearance was noticed by Hoel, an ancient bard of Wales.

My love is of the hue of the foam of the ninth wave.

Then when the night comes down, and the broad moon rises over the bright ocean, the whole scene is softened by her influence. The sounds of day are hushed, and the silence is only broken by the low and pensive murmur of the waves. The beaches glisten beneath her ray, and the various substances, which the tide has cast upon them, glitter with a phosporic glow, of such intense brilliancy, that the eye is deceived into the momentary belief that they are fire. The pebbles of quartz and chalcedony, give out all their lustre, and sometimes look like live coals. The green uplands smile in the soft radiance, and as the moonlight strikes the summits of the tall rocks,

Their giant shadows frown,  
From lofty cliff to cave, descending sombre down.

At Nahant may also be witnessed one of the sublimest spectacles in nature—a view of the Ocean, in a storm. Standing upon a high promontory, and surrounded on three sides by the sea, the waves are beheld accumulating, and swelling, and rolling, and foaming onwards, like animated mountains, and break-

ing, with angry force, against the invincible barrier of rocks, that rises abruptly to check their course, dashing the white foam more than a hundred feet into the air, and sending the salt spray far upon the green highland. The deep, heavy roar of the sea, as it is stopped in its majestic march by a slender bar of sand, sounds like continuous thunder, and may be heard many miles. At no place, on the western continent, are the beauty and sublimity of nature more delightfully combined than at Nahant.

The principal business of Lynn is the manufacture of Ladies' shoes. For the first hundred years from the settlement of the town, this business was very limited. Few persons followed it constantly, and the farmers only pursued it in the intervals of their common employment. The shoes were generally made of neats' leather or woollen cloth. In 1750, Mr. John Adam Deageor came from England, and gave this business its first impulse. After his arrival, shoes were manufactured of finer stuffs—of calamanco, silk and satin. They were made with long straps, for the ladies, like the gentlemen, wore buckles, and the rands were commonly white. The reputation of Lynn shoes soon found way to the cities of the south, and the manufacturers began to extend their business by taking apprentices and employing journeymen. In 1783, Mr. Ebenezer Breed made a visit to England, and on his return, introduced the manufacture of Morocco leather into America. For this important service, he received a complimentary letter, containing the thanks of the National Committee of Commerce and Manufactures. He also brought with him two men from Sheffield, in England, to instruct in the manufacture of crosscut and court heels; and in the ensuing year, he procured two other workmen to make improvements, and by his exertions the business was essentially promoted. Mr. Amos Rhodes and Col. Samuel Brimbelcom were also among those who took an early and very active part in its extension. There are now sixty-two principal manufactories, and fifteen hundred mechanics employed. About the same number of females are engaged in binding and trimming, and by their industry and economy

contribute to the support and respectability of their families.— One million five hundred thousand pair of shoes are annually made, which are distributed to various parts of the United States, or exported to other countries. The flourishing state of the shoe business is indebted in a considerable degree, to the enterprise of Ebenezer Breed, a gentleman who, in early life, enjoyed the smiles of fortune and friends, and whose misfortunes deserve commiseration. The shoemakers of Lynn would confer an honor on themselves and their occupation, by imparting comfort to the age of one, who has spent so many years in promoting the prosperity of their employment.

There are in the town five morocco manufactories, four tanneries, and a manufactory of lasts. There is also an extensive establishment for coloring and printing cloths and silks, called the Lynn Printing Company. There are two manufactories of glue, and two mills in which large quantities of grain and spices are ground. At one of these mills, seventy tons of chocolate are annually made; and at the other, an apparatus has been constructed for sawing marble. Salt is formed at the works on the harbor, but the business is not extensively pursued. There are six wharves, and several vessels employed in the wood and lumber trade. There are seven fire engines, four companies of militia, and one of artillery. There are also a Light Infantry and a Rifle Company, in the best state of military discipline.

The public buildings are six meeting-houses, eight school-houses, an academy, three taverns, a town house, an alms-house, a post-office, and a bank. The religious societies are, two Congregational, two Methodist, one Baptist, and one society of Friends. The service of the Church has been occasionally performed. Other institutions are, a Lyceum, a Temperance Society, a Masonic Lodge, a Savings Bank, an Insurance Company, a Society for providing Watchers for the Sick, a Social and a Circulating Library. The ladies have a Benevolent and a Fragment Society.

There are eight principal Schools in Lynn, beside primary, infant, and private schools. The whole number of scholars

is fifteen hundred. An Academy was established in 1805, and flourished for several years, but lately it has been somewhat neglected. Much attention has recently been given to the important subject of common education, and the schools are reported, by the Committee, to be in a more prosperous state than at any former period. When the importance of education to individual happiness and public prosperity is duly estimated, it is confidently hoped that the inhabitants of Lynn will never suffer their interests to languish, by neglecting to provide the best means in their power for the instruction of their children.

The Ministers of Lynn, in 1829, are Rev. Otis Rockwood, David H. Barlow, Abraham D. Merrill, and Joseph A. Merrill. The Instructors are, Dyer H. Sandborn, Joseph H. Towne, Asa U. Swinnerton, Jeremiah Sandborn, Horace Spaulding, and Alonzo Lewis. The Physicians are, Hon. Aaron Lummus, James Gardner, MD. MMSS. Richard Hazelton, MD. MMSS. John Lummus, MD. Edward L. Coffin, MD. MMSS. and William B. Brown, MD. The Lawyers are, Robert W. Trevett, Isaac Gates, and Jeremiah C. Stickney, Esquires.

In closing this little history, I may be permitted to express my gratitude to all who have assisted me by their encouragement. That a few errors may be found in a work comprising such a variety of facts and dates, is not singular. Some difficulty was experienced in ascertaining the early Representatives, as there were several of the same name, and the places from which they came were not designated. The annexed list is probably correct. On page 33, the sentence containing the word Concord should be omitted; and on page 164, that which contains the word Lisbon. Mr. Cobbet, page 100, went to Ipswich in 1655; and Edward Tomlins, page 66, had "200 and twenty" acres allowed him. It may be added, that the first Sunday School, in this town, was opened in the year 1816, by the author of this sketch. I have been censured, in one instance, for stating the simple truth, that the first set-

tlers of this colony were Episcopalians; a fact as susceptible of proof as any part of history whatever. Prince, who stands in the first rank of our historians, says, "They had been chiefly born and brought up in the National Church, and had, until their emigration, lived in communion with her. Their ministers had been ordained by her Bishops, and had officiated in her parochial churches, and had made no secession from her until they left their native land." The author of the *Planter's Plea*, printed in 1630, says, "It may be with good assurance maintained, that at least three parts of four, of the men there planted, are able to justify themselves to have lived in a constant course of conformity unto our Church government and orders." Numerous other testimonies might be adduced, but fortunately the first settlers of Massachusetts have placed this question beyond dispute. They acknowledge, in a paper signed by their own hands, that the Church of England is their dear mother, and that her children are nearest God's throne of mercy. This is their own language, nor have I taken the advantage of any circumstance to gain a purpose by misrepresentation. I have no possible inducement to deceive mankind. I have sought to introduce no new Gospel, but that which was spoken at the beginning; to call the attention of men to the true faith, the only certain path of salvation. But this is a subject too important for the slight notice that can be admitted into a historical sketch, which has already been unusually extended. That the inhabitants of Lynn may discern their true interest, and be united in its pursuit—that the two next centuries may add still more to their happiness and prosperity than the past have done—that the people of the United States may forego all sectional prejudices of religion, and politics—that the voices of slavery and oppression, may no more be heard in our land—and that its inhabitants may be as renowned for their love to the Church, as they are for their attachment to the principles of civil liberty—is the sincere desire and prayer of the author.



## APPENDIX.

REPRESENTATIVES.		
1631, May 14.	Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, Thomas Willis.	1642. Edward Holyoke.
Sept. 3.	Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, Thomas Willis.	1643. Edward Holyoke, Edward Tomlins.
1635, March 4.	Nathaniel Turner, Timothy Tomlins.	1644. Robert Bridges. Edward Tomlins.
May 6.	Nathaniel Turner, Thomas Smith.	1645. Robert Bridges.
Sept. 2.	Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, Thomas Stanley.	1646. Robert Bridges, <i>Speaker</i> . Thomas Loughton.
1636, Mar. 3.	Nathaniel Turner, William Wood.	1647. Edward Holyoke.
May 25.	Nathaniel Turner, Daniel Howe.	1648. Edward Holyoke Thomas Loughton.
Sept. 8.	Daniel Howe, Timothy Tomlins.	1649 to '53. Thomas Loughton.
Dec. 7.	Daniel Howe.	1654. James Axey.
1637, Apr. 18.	Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.	1655. John Fuller. Thomas Loughton.
May 17.	Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.	1656 to '58. Thomas Loughton.
Sept. 26.	Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.	1659. Thomas Marshall.
Nov. 2.	Timothy Tomlins, Daniel Howe.	1660. May 30. Thomas Marshall. Dec. 19, Thomas Loughton, Oliver Purchis.
1638, Mar. 12.	Edward Howe, Timothy Tomlins.	1661. Thomas Loughton.
May 2.	Edward Howe, Timothy Tomlins.	1662. None.
Sept. 6.	Edward Howe.	1663. Thomas Marshall.
1639, Mar. 13.	Timothy Tomlins. Edward Howe.	1664. May 18. Thomas Marshall, Aug. 3. John Fuller.
May 22.	Timothy Tomlins, Edward Holyoke.	1665 to '67. Oliver Purchis.
Sept. 4.	Edward Holyoke, Edward Tomlins.	1668. Thomas Marshall.
1640, May 13.	Timothy Tomlins, Richard Walker.	1669 to '73. Oliver Purchis.
Oct. 7.	Edward Holyoke, Timothy Tomlins.	1674 to '78. John Fuller.
1641, June 2.	Edward Holyoke, Richard Walker.	1679. Richard Walker.
Oct. 7.	Edward Holyoke, Nicholas Brown.	1680 to '83. Andrew Mansfield.
		1684 to '86. Oliver Purchis.
		1687 to '88. None.
		1689. Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, Capt. Oliver Purchis.
		1690. None.
		1691. John Burrill, jun. hon.
		1692. J. Burrill, sen. J. Burrill, jr. " "But one to serve at a time."
		1693 to '96. John Burrill, jun.
		1697. John Burrill, sen.
		1698 to 1701. John Burrill, jun.
		1702. John Person.
		1703. March 1. John Person. May 13. Samuel Johnson.
		1704. John Burrill, jun.
		1705. Joseph Newhall.
		1706. John Pool.

1707. John Burrill, jun. *Speaker*.  
 1708. Samuel Johnson.  
 1709. John Burrill, jun. *Speaker*.  
 1710. John Person.  
 1711 to '19. John Burrill, jun.  
 1720 to '24. Richard Johnson.  
 1725. Ebenezer Burrill, hon.  
 1726 to '27. Thomas Cheever.  
 1728 to '30. Ebenezer Burrill.  
 1731. May 17. Ebenezer Burrill,  
       June 4. Richard Johnson.  
 1732. Richard Johnson.  
 1733 to '39. William Collins.  
 1740 to '42. Thomas Cheever.  
 1743 to '45. William Collins.  
 1746. Ebenezer Burrill.  
 1747 to '48. William Collins.  
 1749 to '50. Benjamin Newhall.  
 1751. None.  
 1752 to '56. Benjamin Newhall.  
 1757. William Collins.  
 1758 to '62. Benjamin Newhall.  
 1763. William Collins.  
 1764 to '73. Ebenezer Burrill, esq.  
 1774. May 19. Ebenezer Burrill,  
       Oct. 17. Ebenezer Burrill,  
       " " John Mansfield.  
 1775. Feb. 1. John Mansfield.  
       May 31. Nath'l Bancroft.  
       July 12. Edward Johnson.  
 1776 to '77. Edward Johnson.  
 1778. Holton Johnson.  
 1779. May 12. Holton Johnson.  
       Aug. 2. Samuel Burrill.  
       Sept 26. Samuel Burrill.  
 1780 to '81. Samuel Burrill.  
 1782. Holton Johnson.  
 1783. Samuel Burrill.  
 1784 to '90. John Carnes.  
 1791 to '93. Ezra Collins,  
 1794 to '95. John Carnes.  
 1796 to 1800. James Robinson.

## CLERKS OF THE WRITS.

1640. Richard Sadler.  
 1643. Edward Tomlins.  
 1645. Edward Burcham.  
 1655. William Longley.  
 1662. John Fuller.  
 1691. John Fuller, jun.

## TOWN CLERKS.

1666. Andrew Mansfield.  
 1672. Thomas Laighton.  
 1686. Oliver Purchis.  
 1691. Hon. John Burrill.  
 1722. Richard Johnson.  
 1749. John Fuller.  
 1755. Joseph Fuller.  
 1756. Ebenezer Burrill, Esq.  
 1765. Dr. Nathaniel Henchman.  
 1767. Ebenezer Burrill, Esq.  
 1775. Benjamin Newhall, Esq.  
 1777. William Collins.  
 1784. Benjamin Johnson.  
 1785. William Collins.  
 1786. Ephraim Breed.  
 1804. Henry Hallowell.  
 1820. Samuel Hallowell.

## GRADUATES

## AT HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

- \* Deceased. † Removed.  
 1661. \* Rev. Joseph Whiting.  
 1663. \* Samuel Cobbet.  
 1737. \* Rev. Edward Cheever.  
 1744. \* Dr. John Lewis.  
 1747. \* Dr. John Lewis.  
 1747. \* Dr. Nathaniel Henchman.  
 1753. \* Mr. Edw. P. Sparhawk.  
 1758. \* Mr. William Perkins.  
 1771. \* Dr. Jonathan Norwood.  
 1779. \* Rev. Thomas Roby.  
 1779. Abijah Cheever, MMSS.  
       Saugus.  
 1788. † John Dexter Treadwell,  
       MD. AA. MMSS. Salem.  
 1801. \* Dr. Joseph Mansfield.  
 1808. † Rev. James Johnson.  
 1810. † James Hawkes, Dart. C.  
 1812. † Mr. John Bulfinch.  
 1813. \* John Flagg Gardner, MD.  
       MMSS.  
 1813. † Charles A. Cheever, MD.  
 1816. John Lummus, MD. Brown  
       University.  
 1817. Edward L. Coffin, MD.  
       MMSS.  
 1817. † Rev. Samuel Brimbelcom.  
 1817. † Horatio Newhall, MD.  
 1821. † Henry Bulfinch.

# INDEX.

- Academy, 200, 215, 219.  
 Adams 163, 177, 188,  
 Agriculture, 33, 62, 86, 218, 242.  
 Alarms, 40, 79, 165, 176, 209.  
 Amherst settled, 158.  
 Anecdotes, 22, 26, 36 to 42, 69, 72,  
 73, 82, 87, 95, 97, 103 to 107, 115  
 to 120, 126, 134, 143, 149, 164,  
 172, 175, 192, 196, 208, 248.  
 Animals, 7, 22, 33, 36 to 39, 45, 46,  
 55, 69, 73, 98, 144, 145, 148, 149,  
 155, 169, 172, 240.  
 Animal flower, 241, 249.  
 Artillery, 37, 51, 69, 82, 140, 203.  
 Assistants, 50, 76, 78, 81, 93.  
 Bank, 209.  
 Baptists, 75, 80, 91, 97, 115, 123, 212.  
 Barlow, 234.  
 Barnstable settled, 71.  
 Batchelor, 41 to 57, 69, 151.  
 Beaches, 20, 45, 201, 222, 244.  
 Black William, or Manatahqua, 17,  
 26, 43, 45.  
 Boston, 13, 83, 110.  
 Botany, 19, 45, 49, 149, 239.  
 Boundaries, 43, 58, 65, 110, 116.  
 Bridges, 71, 94, 116, 136.  
 Bridges, hon. 78, 87, 91, 93, 94.  
 Brooks, 27, 30, 44, 47, 116.  
 Bunker-Hill, 175.  
 Burial Ground, 145, 223.  
 Burrill, 58, 66, 139, 154, 166, 184.  
 By-laws, 230.  
 Carnes, 192, 194.  
 Centinel, 223.  
 Chase, 150; Rev. Carlton, 219.  
 Cheever, 159, 162, 163.  
 Christmas, 134.  
 Church, 24, 54, 60, 118, 124, 130,  
 148, 150, 161, 216, 219, 222, 255.  
 Children, first born, 29, 30.  
 Clerks of the Writs, 73, 86, 100, 110,  
 140, 258.  
 Cobbet, 62, 68, 81, 95, 100, 115.  
 Cold, 48, 68, 79, 144, 159, 184, 215,  
 216, 220, 222, 227.  
 Comets, 111, 132, 204, 219, 226.  
 Commissioners, 86, 105, 110, 114.  
 Congregationalists, 41, 51, 57, 60,  
 111, 115, 118, 123, 213, 222.  
 Corn, 19, 33, 37, 42, 47, 73, 92, 94,  
 123, 144, 156, 161.  
 Courts, 4, 36, 38, 58, 111, 156,  
 Courtship, 94, 95, 134.  
 Counsellors, 154, 166.  
 Curiosities, 243, 245.  
 Customs, 34, 35, 42, 43, 44, 64, 71,  
 94, 97, 99, 101, 102, 105, 116, 144.  
 Dark Day, 179.  
 Deaggeor, John Adam, 162, 253.  
 Dexter, 26, 39, 42, 43, 68, 91, 92,  
 106, 217.  
 Droughts, 135, 162, 167.  
 Deaths, 63, 78, 120, 130, 157, 171,  
 174, 186, 194, 196, 204, 212, 234,  
 Drowned, 160, 169, 170, 183, 184,  
 185, 186, 190, 196, 198, 199, 200,  
 204, 219, 223, 228, 229.  
 Dungeon, 109, 244.  
 Earthquakes, 81, 107, 111, 156, 157,  
 158, 159, 160, 163, 165, 167, 182,  
 188, 200, 204, 212, 216.  
 Eclipse, 200.  
 Embargo, 202, 203.  
 Episcopalians, 13, 24, 219, 222, 225,  
 Farmers, 32, 62, 69, 86, 218, 242.  
 Fast, 37, 57, 114, 142, 167.  
 Fires, 28, 61, 73, 94, 100, 159, 163,  
 197, 203, 220.  
 Fish, 45, 71, 245.  
 Flagg Dr. John, 189.  
 Freemen, 36.  
 Freemasons, 200, 220, 227, 233.  
 Frosted trees, 231.  
 Frothingham, 199.  
 Geology, 236.  
 Gray Hon. William 226,  
 Gravesend, 53,  
 Green, 223, 230.  
 Griswold, Bishop, 219.  
 Heat 62, 162, 204, 219.  
 Henchman, 153, 156, 160, 161, 166.  
 History, 5, 122.  
 Home, 6, 77.  
 Humfrey, 14, 23, 49, 52, 58, 3, 75,  
 Hurd, 209, 213.

- Indians, 4, 7 to 9, 16, 17, 36 to 42.  
 48, 59, 61, 72, 79 to 81, 97, 99, 103,  
 105, 110, 119 to 121, 134, 136, 146,  
 160, 210, 212, 217, 222.  
 Independence, 201, 204, 209, 229.  
 Instructors, 38, 80, 140, 144, 146, 148,  
 153, 159, 163, 168, 171, 228.  
 Ingalls, 15, 66.  
 Inhabitants, 4, 15, 25, 33, 36, 38, 48,  
 52, 58, 62, 65, 69, 70, 74, 78, 80,  
 83, 84, 93, 95, 120, 123, 233, 234.  
 Iron mines and works, 28, 81 to 85,  
 88, 91 to 99, 108, 116, 134, 140.  
 Jenks, 84, 92, 93, 100, 115.  
 Jones, Rev. Lot, 219.  
 Kertland, 59, 67, 72, 115.  
 Lafayette, 183, 233.  
 Lands, 23, 43, 52, 64, 65, 68, 71,  
 110, 111, 115, 116, 118, 135, 146.  
 Lewis, 30, 70, 92, 141, 153, 175, 219.  
 Libraries, 219, 222.  
 Lightning, 160, 165, 188, 196, 200,  
 203, 233.  
 Lynn, 15, 27, 33, 45, 65, 94, 98, 235.  
 Lynnfield, 68, 147, 148, 209.  
 Lyceum, 231.  
 Marriage, 30, 107.  
 Meetinghouses, 41, 123, 133, 140,  
 148, 158, 200, 206, 213, 222, 230,  
 Meteor, 194, 234.  
 Methodists, 183, 205.  
 Militia, 37 to 44, 51, 76, 86, 87, 92,  
 107, 120, 134, 146, 165, 176, 185,  
 Mills, 27, 30, 44, 50, 100.  
 Mineralogy, 238.  
 Mineral Spring, 204, 243.  
 Ministers, 13, 41, 48, 51, 53, 60, 62,  
 115, 125, 132, 150, 153, 158 to 163,  
 168, 182 to 185, 194, 199, 209, 216,  
 223, 234, 257.  
 Mottey, 132, 220.  
 Nahant, 11, 15, 26, 27, 30 to 38, 45,  
 85, 99, 105, 115, 123, 136, 140,  
 143, 146, 159, 162, 163, 168, 185,  
 197, 200, 216, 237, 245.  
 Newspaper, 226.  
 Night arches, 161, 169, 172, 229.  
 Northern lights, 150, 157, 229.  
 Old tenor, 153, 156, 179.  
 Parsons, 183, 194.  
 Peace, 180, 212.  
 Physicians, 132, 154, 167, 182, 189,  
 233.  
 Pirates, 43, 107.  
 Pitcher, Molly, 207.  
 Ponds, 27, 30, 34, 26, 47, 235.  
 Quakers, 105, 120, 123, 139, 142, 144,  
 163, 221, 223, 227, 228.  
 Reading, 71, 73, 82, 99.  
 Records, 3, 65, 110, 217.  
 Representatives, 36, 48, 257.  
 Roby, 163, 195.  
 Rockwood, 216.  
 Salem, 13, 24, 52, 103, 116, 118.  
 Sandwich settled, 62.  
 Saugus, 15, 25, 38, 42, 45, 212.  
 Sea Serpent, 215.  
 Senators, 205, 222.  
 Selectmen, 58, 123, 141, 163.  
 Schools, 94, 145, 147, 149, 156, 158,  
 204, 216, 221, 234, 255. [See  
 Instructors.]  
 Ship-building, 156.  
 Shipwrecks, 29, 38, 41, 43, 52, 107,  
 159, 163, 165, 168, 185, 190, 192,  
 196, 227, 228, 231, 233, 246.  
 Shepard, 132, 139, 149, 151.  
 Shoes, 16, 59, 98, 124, 159, 162, 253.  
 Sickmess, 93, 122, 154, 158.  
 Slavery, 12, 180, 230.  
 Societies, 227, 228, 254.  
 Southampton settled, 72.  
 Sparhawk, 153, 157.  
 Standard, 52, 134.  
 Stars visible, 223.  
 Storms, 52, 68 78 to 81, 93, 116,  
 120, 122, 149, 156, 159, 169, 170,  
 183, 196, 199, 204, 209, 212, 230,  
 Sungush, 226.  
 Swampscot, 11, 15, 16, 32, 241, 245.  
 Taverns, 38, 39, 47, 64, 69, 71, 73,  
 80, 86, 147, 149, 234.  
 Tea, 150, 169, 171.  
 Thatcher, 185, 206.  
 Tomlins, 30, 44, 51, 58, 73,  
 Town Clerks, 64, 115, 154, 166.  
 Treadwell, 168, 175, 180.  
 Turner, 31, 33, 42, 43, 44, 51, 58 to 61.  
 Turnpike, 194, 198.  
 War, 59, 119, 136, 146, 160, 165,  
 172, 185, 186, 205, 209.  
 Washington, 176, 183, 188.  
 Whale, 164, 230.  
 Wheat, 114, 242.  
 Whiting, 60, 62, 68, 106, 112, 115,  
 122, 125.  
 Winthrop, 23, 40, 42, 62.  
 Witchcraft, 94, 105, 132, 141, 207.  
 Woodend, 32.  
 Woman, 76, 102, 130, 193.  
 Yarmouth settled, 71.





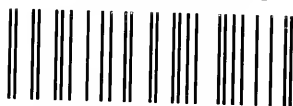








LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 077 676 2